

**HENRY MORTON STANLEY
SCHOOL of CHRISTIAN
JOURNALISM
MANUAL**

by Peter Hammond

HENRY MORTON STANLEY SCHOOL of CHRISTIAN JOURNALISM

MANUAL

by Peter Hammond

CONTENTS

		Page
Chapter 1	Battle for the Mind in the News Media	1
Chapter 2	Balanced and Biblical Christian Journalism	3
Chapter 3	Dealing with Deceit	7
Chapter 4	How Propaganda Changes Perceptions and People	10
Chapter 5	Lies We Must Refuse to Believe	17
Chapter 6	False Flags, Active Measures, Disinformation and Subversion Campaigns	22
Chapter 7	How the New World Order is Hijacking Civilisation	27
Chapter 8	Resisting the New World Order	34
Chapter 9	The Heart and Soul of Karl Marx	36
Chapter 10	How Marxists Subvert Churches and Society	38
Chapter 11	The Turkish Genocide of Armenian, Assyrian and Greek Christians	40
Chapter 12	Dunkirk – Separating Fact from Fiction	44
Chapter 13	Katyn – Unravelling One of the Many Secrets of World War II	48
Chapter 14	The Bombing of Cities in World War II	53
Chapter 15	Were Atomic Bombs Necessary to End World War II	59
Chapter 16	The Greatest Killer	62
Chapter 17	Was Winston Churchill the Greatest Briton of All Time?	65
Chapter 18	Darkest Hour – The Legend of Winston Churchill	70
Chapter 19	The Truth about “Martin Luther King Jr.”	80
Chapter 20	Lessons from the Rwandan Holocaust	85
Chapter 21	Racism – Rhetoric or Reality	88
Chapter 22	Mandela Day and the Making of a New Religion	91
Chapter 23	Terrorism in Great Britain	94
Chapter 24	Zimbabwe Celebrates as Mugabe Falls	97
Chapter 25	Farms and Freedoms Under Fire in South Africa	101
Chapter 26	Is South Africa Entering the Second Phase of the Revolution?	106
Chapter 27	Fraud, Failure and Farce – Land Expropriation Hearings	109
Chapter 28	BBBEE Affirmative Action is Racism	113
Chapter 29	The National Suicide of the Xhosa	118
Chapter 30	Deliberate Arson in the Cape	122
Chapter 31	Busses, Trains and Police Stations Burn	123
Chapter 32	Notre Dame Cathedral in Paris Fire	125
Appendix 1	Nine Stages to Genocide in South Africa	128
Appendix 2	Fearless Farmers Who Fought Back	131
Appendix 3	How Can We Resist the Second Phase of the Revolution	137
Appendix 4	Recommended Websites	139
Appendix 5	Recommended History Films	140
Appendix 6	The Most Important Books in History	142
Appendix 7	Recommended Books on Journalism	144
Appendix 8	Recommended Films on Journalism	144

THE BATTLE FOR THE MIND IN THE NEWS MEDIA

“Therefore, having put away falsehood, let each one of you speak the truth with his neighbour...” Ephesians 4:25

While claiming to be neutral, newspaper journalists and TV presenters often report the news from an anti-Christian point of view. At one time, especially in the 19th century, most leading newspapers were Christian. However, there has been a major shift in the news media on what is covered and how it is covered.

Is There an Agenda?

Instead of the wide-angle lens of context, all too often the zoom lens of selective focus has predominated. Is there an agenda? Or are we dealing merely with bias and prejudice?

Misinformation on Mozambique

My first mission field was Marxist Mozambique. Many asked why the mass media accounts of what was happening in Mozambique differed so radically from Frontline Fellowship reports.

My answer was that there simply was no freedom of speech, freedom of movement or freedom of the press in Mozambique at that time. Most press accounts in Mozambique came from Frelimo's Agency Information Mozambique (AIM). These press releases were distributed by telex and the wire services of SAPA-Reuter and others. Most articles in the print media and items on radio and TV originated with AIM, a Marxist, state-owned propaganda agency - hardly renowned for honesty and lack of bias.

During the 1980s very few journalists actually visited Mozambique, and those who did were normally restricted to the five-star Polana Hotel in Maputo. Their main sources of information were briefings by Frelimo officials, or guided tours and stage-managed interviews - all hosted by Marxist officials and translators.

In a country with a history of concentration camps, torture, public floggings and mass executions, it was easy to find co-operative villagers and pastors who would espouse the desired party line. Those gullible and naïve journalists who then readily parroted the standard stock phrases, parrot cries and clichés no doubt received Frelimo's approval, and further invitations to return for another propaganda exercise some other day.

By way of contrast, our missionaries had continual contact with the people on the ground, in the rural areas. We got the feel of the country by personal experience, over long periods of time, and as the villagers unburdened their hearts to us and related what they had suffered. *“An ounce of experience is worth a ton of theory.”*

Disinformation in Rwanda

The ease with which the orchestrators of the genocide in Rwanda confused international journalists and abused their national media to mobilize the unprecedented concentration of carnage, raised uncomfortable questions.

In its 1200 page report on the genocide in Rwanda, African Rights concluded that: *“The response to the aftermath of the genocide was almost as shocking as the response to the genocide itself... Progress towards justice has been negligible. On the contrary, there is a concentrated attempt to distort or deny what has happened. The survivors of the genocide are not the beneficiaries of national and international compassion and support, rather they are almost wholly forgotten, while displaced people and refugees receive massive and indiscriminate assistance... The refusal to face the reality of what is one of the very worst crimes against humanity since the foundation of the United Nations...”*

The AR report found that the killings were meticulously organised in advance. The French-trained Presidential Guard, the Army, the Gendarmes and Civil Administrators were willing instruments in the genocide. The killings in Rwanda were no spontaneous outburst, but followed instructions from the highest level.

African Rights condemned the gullibility of the international media for accepting the MRND party line that the killings were merely *“tribal anarchy”* and *“uncontrollable tribal killing.”* By portraying the genocide as *“tribalism”* and as a result of *“the war”* they provided a smokescreen of confusion, which allowed the killers to proceed with their diabolical plans.

Central to the Hutu MRND government strategy was to sow confusion so that no one knew what was happening. They isolated their victims by imposing a news blackout, cutting telephone links, establishing a dense network of roadblocks, and imposing a nationwide curfew. These measures kept people in their homes and prevented most people from fleeing. By cutting communications and restricting travel they isolated their victims and sought to stifle the flow of news.

When the genocide was launched on 6 April 1994, most African correspondents were in South Africa for the elections. There were, actually, only two international journalists in Rwanda at that time - and they were in Kigali, cut off from what was going on in the rural areas.

Following the assassination of the president the MRND government launched a campaign of disinformation. They portrayed the killings as a spontaneous outbreak of “tribal violence”. They sought to confuse the mass killings of defenceless peoples with “the war” and insisted that a ceasefire was the pre-condition for involvement. Thirdly they played “the humanitarian card” by pleading for emergency aid. All this deflected attention from the central issue of the genocide.

The tenancy of most journalists to label every conflict in Africa as “tribalism” has become absurd. Many foreign aid workers fuelled this tendency with ill-informed comments such as: “Everyone is killing everyone!”, “its uncontrollable violence”; “the Hutus and Tutsis are killing one another again!”

Having killed opposition politicians, Rwandese journalists, human rights activists and others who might present an accurate report on the bloodshed, the MRND government then pursued their second strategy of disinformation to confuse the issue with self-serving false reports. They portrayed the violence as “spontaneous rage” in response to the assassination of the president, even though it was the MRND government and military who were responsible for the assassination of the President themselves.

In the first days, international attention generally focused on the plight of foreigners. Camera crews were, understandably, only prepared to travel with international troops - whose mission was to evacuate foreigners. This naturally led to a slanted and incomplete picture being portrayed to the world.

The strategy of disinformation and terror so callously and effectively orchestrated by the MRND Hutu government in Rwanda was spectacularly successful. With most international attention focused on South Africa’s volatile elections, there were no journalists in the rural areas of Rwanda reporting on the massacres there. The rural genocide was effectively hidden from the outside world for almost three weeks.

Aaron Makuba, whose whole family was wiped out complained: “The world persists in characterizing the bloodshed as ethnic clashes. We who have lost our families, relatives, colleagues and neighbours regard this as unfair, unjust and a source of immense pain.”

“People should stop describing Rwanda to us as tribes who are in the process of killing one another,” Dr Jean Herve Bradol of MSF - France concluded, “I think it is really the final insult to the victims, to present the matters in this way. And I believe that this way of presenting things is not altogether incidental, perhaps in order to justify the passivity of various parties...”

Focusing on Darfur and Ignoring the Nuba

It is quite remarkable that such a vast amount of media attention has recently been focused on the suffering of Muslims in Darfur, while completely ignoring the vastly greater and much longer tragedy of Islamic *Jihad* against the Christians of Southern Sudan and the Nuba Mountains.

Approximately 2 million people, most of these Christians, died in the 50 years *Jihad* against the Christians in Southern Sudan. Yet, the news media showed little interest and the UN and Western governments did comparatively little for the Christian victims of *Jihad* in Southern Sudan.

However, for some reason, the five years of low intensity conflict in Western Sudan in Darfur has received enormous worldwide media and government attention. As a result it has also received disproportionately more Church attention and aid.

Darfur is a 99% Muslim area in Western Sudan. What had been going on in Darfur is Muslim-on- Muslim violence. It is typical Arab banditry that has been going on for centuries. In this case Muslim Arabs are fighting against Muslim Blacks. The Christians that we serve in Southern Sudan, Northern Nigeria and other parts of Africa, are somewhat cynical about this, pointing out that it seems the West is only concerned for Muslims and never Christians.

The West was tremendously concerned for Muslims in Bosnia, Muslims in Kuwait, Muslims in Somalia, Muslims in Afghanistan and Iraq and Muslims in Darfur. However, the West stood by while hundreds of thousands of Christians were slaughtered in Rwanda and in Southern Sudan and the Nuba Mountains. The point made is that it would seem that the world media, and the UN, would only mobilize international campaigns to support Muslim victims, never Christians.

Another point worth noting is that the Black Muslims of Darfur have traditionally been some of the worst slave raiders, guilty of many of the worst atrocities committed against Christians in Bar-el-Ghazal, and the Nuba Mountains. When General Charles Gordon travelled to Sudan in the 19th century, he saw that the worst slave raids came from the Darfur Muslims. At that time he noted that 7 out of every 8 Black people in Sudan were slaves.

BALANCED AND BIBLICAL CHRISTIAN JOURNALISM

“Therefore, having put away falsehood, let each one of you speak the truth with his neighbour...” Ephesians 4:25

Villifying the Victims and Justifying the Villains

Over the last 37 years that I have been serving as missionary to the persecuted in Africa, I could not help but notice how frequently the mass media chose to target those targeted by international communism, or racial Islam. Is it just coincidental that during the Rhodesian War, the Border war in South West Africa/Namibia, the riots in South Africa, the Killing fields of Mozambique, the civil war in Angola, the massacre of Matebele tribesmen in Zimbabwe, the Red Terror in Ethiopia, the holocaust in Rwanda, the *Jihad* in Sudan, the wave of church burning in Northern Nigeria, the persecution of Christians in Egypt, or any other of the many calamities and conflicts in Africa, most of the mass media have chosen to confuse the issues, avoid the heart of the matter, vilify the victims and whitewash the villains.

Pro-Abortion Journalism

After one interview with a journalist from The Argus concerning our work in Sudan, I asked: *“Why is it that The Argus continually publishes Pro-Abortion articles and ignores Pro-Life events such as the Life Chains and the National Day of Repentance?”*

The answer was astounding: *“Well, we’re pro-choice”*.

“Yes, I understand that, but surely it is your intention to report events and present the facts, without fear or favour, from both sides?”

She smiled and shrugged her shoulders: *“Well, I’m pro-choice. Every journalist that I know is pro-choice. And, well, I guess we’re just biased!”* she grinned broadly.

That was a remarkable honest statement, but there is no doubt that most of the print media in South Africa is overwhelmingly pro-abortion and pro-homosexuality.

Selective Focus

Although most journalists and editors will claim that they are objective, even the most objective journalist has to admit that they collect far more facts than they publish. There is the judgment on what to cover, how to cover it and what facts, opinions or viewpoints that they have come across to include in the story and which to discard.

Secondly the reporter or editor decides which of the facts should be included in the first paragraph of the story and thereby emphasized above the others.

Thirdly the editor will decide whether the story is placed on page one, or page sixteen. On page one it will attract far more attention than it would on any other page.

Fourthly the editor chooses which pictures will illustrate the article and what captions they will receive. The pictures themselves may be edited to emphasise the point being made.

Spiking the Spiritual

Although at one time, particularly in the early part of the 19th century, journalism emphasized God’s sovereignty and man’s responsibility, most modern journalists choose to spike the Spiritual. At one time newspaper articles pointed out that kings who disobeyed God were exposed and deposed. Those who engaged in duels were without true honour because they sought esteem amongst men more than following God’s commands. Lightning storms were seen to demonstrate Spiritual lessons. Lack of repentance was shown to have murderous consequences.

Publishing God’s Obituary

However, as non-Christian secular humanist journalists came to dominate newspapers, they redefined reality by excluding the spiritual realm. Many editors actually tried to publish God’s obituary declaring: *“God is dead!”*

Redefining Reality

Typically newspaper stories present random events in a chance universe. Journalists who believe in evolution tend to evidence the Humanistic worldview that we came from nothing, we’re going nowhere and life is meaningless. Instead of seeing patterns in events, journalists with a materialistic worldview simply see random effects of time plus chance. Governments rise and fall, corruption occurs, people are murdered, cars crash, natural disasters occur, some people abuse children. However, there is no explanation. No patterns are exposed. There are no lessons to learn (Well aside from *Christianity is the root of all evil. Believing in God is dangerous and all whites are racist.*)

Behind the News Headlines

The fact that most murderers are under the influence of drugs or alcohol at the time will not be emphasised. The fact that most vehicle accidents are alcohol and drug related is apparently irrelevant. The Islamic doctrine of *Jihad* and its role in over 90% of the wars and terrorist campaigns in the world today will not even be referred to. The Marxist ideology of dictators and mass murderers such as Joseph Stalin, Mao Tse Tung, Pol Pot, Mengistu, Fidel Castro and Robert Mugabe will scarcely receive a mention. In fact, I regularly get challenged by people denying that Mugabe is a Marxist or that ZANU-PF is a communist revolutionary movement, as described by themselves in their own constitution.

The Unmentionable Facts

Apparently personal beliefs are unimportant in the mind of many modern journalists. The fact that AIDS was originally called GRIDS (Gay Related Immunisation Deficiency Syndrome) and that a vastly disproportionate percentage of homosexuals contract AIDS is ignored. Most humanist reporters who believe in a materialistic worldview refuse to consider the possibility that AIDS could be a judgment of God and a warning to promiscuous and adulterous individuals who violate God's commands. If such a possibility is even referred to, it would be in the context of ridiculing the idea that the terror of AIDS provides us with an opportunity for repentance.

Deflecting Attention Away from a Homosexual Paedophilia Scandal

The homosexual paedophilia scandal within the Roman Catholic church is reported as a church scandal though most churches condemn perversion and paedophilia. The homosexual infiltration of Roman catholic parishes is ignored as not important, or relevant to the story.

A Challenge for Life Changing Repentance

Few journalists today will consider the perspective of the Lord Jesus when reporting on man-made or natural disasters. *"Do you suppose that these Galileans were worse sinners than all other Galileans, because they suffered such things? I tell you, no; but unless you repent you will all likewise perish. Or those eighteen on whom the tower in Siloam fell and killed them, do you think that they were worse sinners than all other men who dwelt in Jerusalem? I tell you, no; but unless you repent you will all likewise perish."* Luke 13:2-5

Spiritual Realities

Christian journalism should recognise the reality of the spiritual realm. Firstly God is sovereign, so no events happen by chance. History is His Story. Nations rise and fall in response to how they respond to God's Word and Law. Obedience to God's Word has produced the most productive, prosperous and free nations in History. Disobedience to the Law of God has had disastrous consequences.

There is evil in this world. Satan and his legions of fallen angels, demons, are active in the world. Although we may not always perceive it, we are involved in a great Spiritual World War between God and His angels and the devil and his demons. Mankind is fallen Creation. Man is created by God, but our human nature is sinful. Because we are created by God there is some good, even in the worst of us. Because we are fallen there is bad even in the best of us. Suffering and evil are the result of man's rebellion against God since the Fall. *"Do not be deceived: God cannot be mocked. A man reaps what he sows."* Galatians 6:7

God is ultimate reality. Our basis for knowledge is God's revelations. We can know what is right and what is wrong from the Word of God. The purpose of our existence is to glorify God and to worship Him forever.

The destructive tendencies of sin within each one of our hearts is very real. Without the Grace of God and the Redemption brought about by Christ's sacrifice on the Cross we would all be doomed.

God really does answer prayer. Not by making us feel better psychologically, but by actually transforming earthly situations, although not always in the way we expect.

By seeking to exclude spiritual realities from the front page, secular newspaper editors are ignoring fundamental reality.

Biblical Examples of Balanced Reporting

We can find good examples of complete news coverage in the Bible. The report on the parting of the Red Sea in **Exodus** takes into account both the physical events and the spiritual dimensions. The battles and conflicts against the Philistines in **Judges** reports factually the interaction of spiritual and material forces.

The conquest of Canaan by **Joshua** and the Israelites not only includes military and sociological details, but is clearly shown to be God's Judgment upon wicked and immoral people, even as His mercy, guidance and protection is bestowed upon the Hebrews.

The ancient Bible book of **Job** reports a series of sensational disaster stories - a family wiped out, their house destroyed by a tornado, herds stolen, physical affliction, mental turmoil, marital dissention, not as random events in a chance universe, but as part of a drama involving Heaven, hell and earth. The report on Job's tribulation begins with the conflict between God and Satan. The drama on earth is seen in the light of a dialogue in Heaven.

Of course earthly reporters do not have access to what is going on in Heaven at this time. The inspired Biblical reporters were privileged to have God reveal facts that we could not discover on our own. However, we do have the Bible to enable us to understand earthly events in the light of Spiritual realities. *"In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God and the Word was God."* John 1:1. For any journalist wanting to present a compelling report which is accurate, interesting, relevant and insightful, the Scriptures provide many case studies.

1 and 2 Kings and **Chronicles** not only report on the various national leaders and their achievements, but expose their failures and evaluate them in the light of how faithful they were to God's Law or not.

The **Gospels** and **Acts** include first-hand, eyewitness reports of miraculous healings, deliverances and all the drama and intrigue of the plot by the Jewish religious leaders to arrest Jesus of Nazareth, the treachery of Judas's betrayal of Christ, the political double-dealing and cowardice of Pontius Pilate, the brutal tortures and execution of Christ and his triumphal Resurrection from the grave.

"In the past God spoke... through the prophets... but in these last days He has spoken to us by His Son..."
Hebrews 1:1-2

Distinguishing Between News and Views

We need to recognise the fact that in every news story we are not only receiving information, but we are being influenced. The news media includes more views than news. The particular worldview of any journalist will come through. Underlying every article we read is the worldview, whether it be theistic, pantheistic or atheistic.

To evaluate any journalists' worldview we should ask:

1. What are his fundamental beliefs about life?
2. What is he using to interpret the facts?
3. What are the practical implications of his worldview?
4. How consistent is his worldview?
5. What implications would it have for me personally?
6. What would it mean for the world in general?

Recognising Humanistic Bias in the Media

You can recognise some of the basic tenants of Humanism in most newspaper articles and in many films and news programmes.

Materialism maintains that there is no reality beyond the physical.

Existentialism evaluates everything from subjective personal experience.

Agnosticism maintains that it is impossible to settle the primary questions in life because of the limitations of human knowledge.

The **Evolutionist** maintains that we are matter in motion, evolved slime, monkeys who mutated, from goo to the zoo to you. From mud to monkeys to man. A cosmic accident. The result of random chance.

Marxism maintains that everything is primarily determined by economics.

The **Hedonist** maintains that we should live for our own personal pleasure.

Relativism teaches that truth is only whatever a particular individual or society decides that it is. There are no absolute standards of right or wrong, no universal truths and no absolute code of conduct. All truth is relative.

The **Utilitarian** declares that *"the end justifies the means"*. The belief in radical individualism and autonomy unguided by virtue is the essence of utilitarianism. Personal happiness and success are to be achieved and justified by whatever means are necessary to obtain them. Using circumstances and people is justified. The goal is everything. Whatever means are needed to reach it are utilized and justified.

The **Secular Humanist** declares that: *"There is no God to save us; we must save ourselves!"*

The **Post-modernist** says: *"There is no absolute truth; we must create our own!"*

And the **New-ager** declares: *"There is no God; I am my own god!"*

Dr. David Noebel observes: “At first the temptation is to see **mankind** as God. Then it becomes **us** as God. Then finally it is **me** as God. So the progression moves from the worship of man, to the worship of us, to the worship of me. In the end all anthropologists become idolaters. I am god! Like little anti-Christ’s that exalt to magnify themselves in the temple of their minds.”

The Humanist Agenda

Much of journalism today promotes the Humanistic agenda: that man is a product of evolutionary chance and that this theory must be taught as a fact of science at school. That education must be controlled by the state; that education must be Secular and free of moral absolutes. That sex education must be compulsory in schools. That pornography should be allowed as “free speech”. That abortion is a “woman’s right”. That homosexuality is an acceptable “alternative lifestyle”. That criminals are “victims of society” requiring treatment and rehabilitation, rather than punishment.

The Curse of Socialism

Despite the devastation and destruction wreaked by socialism throughout the last century, it is incredible how many journalists believe in the unworkable economics of socialism. As seen in Cuba, Zimbabwe and North Korea, socialism destroys incentive, initiative, income and industry. Yet it still seems to be the favourite form of economics promoted in all too many newspapers and programmes.

Superficial and Sensational

Superficial, sensational and immoral material predominates in the modern entertainment industry. It is producing an increasingly superficial, selfish, mindless and immoral society. However, it is just this kind of entertainment that receives most of the attention and accolades in the average Secular newspaper. Those like Mel Gibson who try to produce an accurate and realistic film on the life of Christ receive abuse and scorn.

Antinomian Ethics

Most journalists reject the Law of God and instead vigorously promote situation ethics, amorality, existentialism, hedonism, pornography, homosexuality, sex education and abortion.

Aborting God

Evolution is an attempt to abort God retroactively. Evolution destroys all meaning, purpose, direction, justice and hope in life. Yet evolution is the favourite theory of origins promoted in most Secular publications today.

Secular Humanism is attempting to kill God by eradicating Him from the classroom and the minds of the next generation. Many in the news media are seeking to assist in this. By eliminating the Bible as the basis for all knowledge, humanists are removing the very foundation of truth. They are prohibiting the only objective standard by which reality can be evaluated.

“All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correction and training in righteousness.”
2 Timothy 3:16

Learn to Discern

We need to be careful and critical in what we read. We need to be selective in what news sources we trust. We need to read and listen with discernment, evaluating everything in the light of the Scriptures. Subscribe to trustworthy Christian newsletters and magazines, listen to faithful Christian radio programmes and visit reliable Christian websites. Visit [Henry Morton Stanley School of Christian Journalism](http://HenryMortonStanleySchoolofChristianJournalism.com) website and [Facebook](https://www.facebook.com/HMSchoolofChristianJournalism) page for audio lectures, videos, articles, lectures and links for bold and Biblical Christian journalism.

“Choose for yourselves this day whom you will serve... but as for me and my household, we will serve the Lord.”
Joshua 24:50

Dr. Peter Hammond

Reformation Society

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725

Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021-689-4480

mission@frontline.org.za

www.ReformationSA.org

www.FrontlineMissionSA.org

www.hmsschoolofchristianjournalism.org

Chapter 3

DEALING WITH DECEIT

“Then I saw an angel coming down from Heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. He laid hold of the dragon, that serpent of old, who is the devil and satan, and bound him for a thousand years, and he cast him into the bottomless pit and shut him up and set a seal on him, so that he should deceive the nations no more...” Revelation 20:1-3

God is Truth. God’s Word is Truth. Jesus Christ is the Way, the Truth and the Life.

“And war broke out in Heaven... that serpent of old, called the devil and satan who deceives the whole world...”
Revelation 12:7

Deceiving the Nations

Satan is deceiving the nations. Education teaches you **how** to think. Indoctrination teaches you **what** to think. The ability to think critically is becoming less and less common. We are being subjected to the greatest flood of misinformation and disinformation in the history of mankind.

Misinformation

Misinformation is error, either as a result of sincere mistakes or typographical errors. Frequently trusting in unreliable sources results in misunderstanding the facts of a matter.

Disinformation

Disinformation is the intentional distortion of events or issues. Communist governments establish departments of disinformation to manufacture deceit and confuse the issues. While misinformation is unintentional, disinformation is intentional.

The Duty to Stand for the Truth

Under the Duties Required in the Ninth Commandment, the Westminster Larger Catechism lists: The Duty of preserving and promoting truth. The duty to stand for the truth and to do so from the heart. The duty to speak the truth and only the truth in matters of judgment and justice. The duty to speak the truth at all times. The duty to study and practice everything true, noble, lovely and of good report.

Enemies of Truth

Under the Sins Forbidden in the Ninth Commandment, the Westminster Standards includes: The sin of giving false evidence. The sin of lying. The sin of concealing the truth. The sin of misconstruing intentions. The sin of exaggerating minor faults. The sin of perverting the truth to a wrong meaning.

World Opinion

The Scripture teaches us that satan is deceiving the nations. If we find ourselves in full agreement with the United Nations, we need to stop and carefully consider where we have been deceived. *Global warming! Sexism! Racism! Black Economic Empowerment. Affirmative Action. Alternative Lifestyles. Evolution. Atheism. Socialism.* If you agree with the world on these issues then satan has deceived you.

Pervasive Propaganda

Propaganda, the calculated manipulation of public opinion to serve political and ideological interests is pervasive. Propaganda aims to do other peoples thinking for them. Propaganda today has moved into Prop-Agenda, not only controlling **what** we think, but **how** we think, and **what** we think about.

Privileges for Perverts

If you don’t support gay rights (privileges for perverts), then you are a *homophobic, narrow-minded, hateful bigot!*

Repeat this Mantra

Islam is a peaceful and tolerant religion! If you dare to suggest that Islam is violent and intolerant then you are *a mean, intolerant, Islamaphobe!* (and you may receive death threats or worse.)

Science Fiction

If you don’t accept the politically correct fairy tale for grownups: Evolution, then you are unscientific. A whole lot of time and a whole lot of nothing made everything. From goo, to the Zoo, to you. From mud, to monkeys, to man. If you demand evidence of these unproven assertions, or advocate Intelligent Design, then you are an *ignorant, unscientific fool* and you are too dangerous to allow as a teacher or lecturer in government schools and colleges.

Pro-Abortion Propaganda

If you oppose abortion, then *you are against women's rights!* If you insist on calling it the killing of a baby, we will try to have you prosecuted for *hate speech*. It is a *Product of Conception* (POC) and we need to refer to *Termination of Pregnancy* (TOP) not aborting the baby! If you insist on equal rights for unborn babies, then you are *anti-choice* and should expect to never be promoted or appointed to any senior position in a government hospital.

Revolutionary Truth

In a time of universal deceit, telling the truth becomes a revolutionary act.

Politically Correct Euphemisms

Secular humanist indoctrination requires that you use the politically correct euphemisms: Racial discrimination is now called *Black Economic Empowerment* and *Affirmative Action*. Sexual perversion is to be called *Alternative Lifestyles*. Looting of farms and murder of farmers is to be called *Land Reform*. Killing of babies is to be called *Removal of the Product of Conception* or *Termination of Pregnancy*. Killing old or sick people is to be called *Euthanasia*. Censorship is to be called the *Information Bill*.

Newspeak

George Orwell in his book 1984, described it as: *Newspeak* and *Thought Control*.

The Manufacture of Consent

As American journalist Walter Lippmann, wrote: *The art of democracy required the manufacture of consent.*

Rewriting History

Karl Marx declared: *The first battlefield is the rewriting of history.*

Propaganda and Agitation

Vladimir Lenin, in his book: *What Is To Be Done*, required the Communist Party to use propaganda to indoctrinate the educated and intelligent masses, and agitation – the use of slogans, stories and selected half-truths to exploit the grievances of the uneducated and ignorant masses.

Justifying Deceit

Every unit in the Communist Party is to have an Agit-Prop section. As Vladimir Lenin taught: *Deceit in propaganda is justified, because **the end justifies the means***. As Vladimir Lenin famously noted: *Treaties are like pie crusts, made to be broken. To tell the truth is a petty bourgeois habit, but to lie and to lie convincingly is a sign of superior intelligence.*

Regimenting the Public Mind

As Walter Lippmann wrote in *Public Opinion: The simple minded and sheep-like people need to be led by a specialised class of enlightened elites. The goal is: the making of one general will out of multitude of general wishes*. As Edward Bernays of the Committee of Public Information (CPI) declared: *The public must be regimented.*

A Bodyguard of Lies

Sir Winston Churchill, the British Prime Minister during World War II declared: *In war time, truth is so precious, that she should always be attended by a bodyguard of lies.*

Manipulation of Minds

George Creel, who coordinated the Committee on Public Information in the United States, defined their goals as: *To manipulate attitudes, beliefs and actions.*

Daily Deception

On almost any given day you will be confronted with deception. Certainly through the news media and the entertainment industry. Deceit is their stock and trade. As has been observed, you can always tell when a politician is lying, his lips move. An even when he dies, he lies still.

Identifying Propaganda

There are numerous tell tail signs that you can look for to identify deception in propaganda. Propaganda can be subtle, but it is aimed at your emotions. Over simplification, emotionalisation and sentimentality are all dead giveaways of deceit. Propagandists tend to reuse short, catchy slogans to communicate their agenda. Its repetitiveness begins to sound something like a mantra.

Alternative Opinions Forbidden

When you come across forcefulness and authoritarian implied condemnation of any alternative viewpoint then you are ensured that you are dealing with indoctrination, not education.

Ignoring the Wider Context

Propaganda commonly ignores the historical context, uses selective stories and a narrow source of *experts*, those who tow the party line. Propaganda demonises the enemy and uses such a narrow focus that you could describe it as using the zoom lens rather than the wide-angle lens of context.

One Sided Generalisations

The *always*, or *never* type of extremism also frequently rears its head in propaganda. *There is only one side of the story* when it comes to classic propaganda.

Stampeding the Herd

Propaganda often intimidates readers, listeners or viewers into joining the herd by using prejudicial and harsh labels for anyone who disagrees with the party line. This stampede into rubber stamping the prescribed agenda is a hallmark of all propaganda: *All right thinking people agree! No one in their right mind would deny! Scientists have confirmed! Those who care for the poor agree... All freedom loving people want to see...*

Criminalising Dissent

Lies, omissions and distortions are a hallmark of propaganda. There are frequently logical fallacies and inconsistencies if one looks for them. When laws need to be passed criminalizing those who disagree with any given piece of indoctrination, then you know that it must be a lie. The truth does not need to bully people into chanting a mantra of agreement.

Animal Farm

George Orwell's books: *1984* and *Animal Farm*, are most insightful in exposing the inconsistencies and falsehood inherent in propaganda. In *Animal Farm*, the chant of the faithful sheep: *Four legs good! Two legs bad!* The rewriting of the laws of their revolution on the barn wall:

1. *All animals are equal*, later becomes: *All animals are equal, but some are more equal than others.*
2. *To: No animal shall kill another animal*, is later added *without cause.*
3. *The: No animals shall sleep in a bed*, is later changed to *No Animal shall sleep in a bed with sheets.*

The pigs who represent the Communist Party officials, violate and change every rule of their own Revolution. George Orwell didn't dream all this up, he merely was using a parable to communicate exactly what had happened in the Soviet Union.

Hypocrites

Those who claim to stand for freedom became the most oppressive regime in history. Those who claimed to want to uplift the poor, actually oppressed the poor worse than any other state in history. Those who claimed to champion world peace, caused more war, more bloodshed and more massacres of civilians than any other movement in history. Though they talk of freedom, they themselves are slaves of corruption (2 Peter 2:19).

Thought Crimes

In 1984, George Orwell wrote of *Thought Crimes*. Today one is getting to the stage where if you disagree with, for example, perversion, you can be accused of a *hate crime!*

Deceptive Language

Jargon is also used to obscure the truth. Civilian casualties are referred to as: *collateral damage*. Murder is frequently: *liquidation*. Terror bombing of cities is called: *Saturation Bombing or Strategic Bombing Campaign*. Starvation of civilian populations is called: *an economic blockade, or sanctions*.

Labels

Scientology speak about those people who have gone through their programmes as: *clear*. Those who have not are labelled: *toxic!*

Foolishness

Frequently we are encouraged: *If it feels good, do it!*, or to *follow your heart!*

Yet the Book of Proverbs warns us that those who trust in their own heart are fools!

True Freedom

Jesus Christ said: *"You shall know the truth and the truth shall make you free."* John 8:32

It is absolutely essential that we know the truth of history to recognise the lies of propaganda and indoctrination. We need to study God's Word in the Bible so that we can be freed from the deceptions of the world, the flesh and the devil.

Chapter 4

HOW PROPAGANDA CHANGES PERCEPTIONS AND PEOPLE

“Then Jesus said... ‘And you shall know the truth and the truth shall make you free.’” John 8:31-32

The first casualty in war is truth.

Beware the Victor’s Version

As Mr. Rees-Davies, my High School history teacher in Rhodesia reminded us: *“Beware the victor’s version!”* War time propaganda becomes school textbooks. Mr. Rees-Davis, who was also a Member of Parliament, reminded us that Britain, for whom we Rhodesians had fought in the World Wars and in the Malayan Conflict, was not only lying about us and sanctioning us, but were aiding the terrorists who were murdering our farmers and missionaries. *“Why would we believe their version of the world wars when we know they are lying about us today?”*

Mass Suggestion

As early as 1930, John Dewey observed that: *“We are being exposed to the greatest flood of mass suggestion that any people has yet experienced.”*

Manipulation of Public Opinion

Propaganda is to Democracies what violence is to Dictatorships. Propaganda, the calculated manipulation of public opinion to serve political and ideological interests, is pervasive. We are also exposed to commercial propaganda: Marketing and Advertising.

Prop-Agenda

Propaganda today has moved into prop-agenda, not only controlling what we think, but how we think and what we think about. Propaganda aims to do other people’s thinking for them.

Selective Focus

Propaganda uses highly selective images, devious and prejudicial language. Dubious linkages, confusing issues and distorting reality with disinformation, is a daily reality.

Revolutionary

George Orwell wrote: *“In a time of universal deceit, telling the truth becomes a revolutionary act.”*

The First Battlefield

Karl Marx declared: *“The first battlefield is the rewriting of history.”*

Propaganda and Agitation

In his book, *What is to be Done*, published in 1902, Vladimir Lenin defined propaganda as the use of historical and scientific arguments to indoctrinate *“the educated and intelligent.”* Agitation was described by Lenin as the use of slogans, stories and selective half-truths to exploit the grievances of the *“un-educated and ignorant masses.”*

Deceit is Justified

Every unit of the Communist Party was to have an Agit-Prop section. Deceit in propaganda is justified because the end justifies the means. As Vladimir Lenin regularly said: *“Treaties are like piecrusts, made to be broken. To tell the truth is a petty bourgeois habit, but to lie and to lie convincingly is a sign of superior intelligence.”*

The End Justifies the Means

The aim of propaganda is to rally people behind a cause. If this requires exaggerating, misrepresenting, or even lying about the issues, in order to gain that support, *“the end justifies the means.”*

Tactics of Propaganda

Common tactics used in propaganda are:

1. Ignoring the historic context
2. Using selective stories
3. Utilising a narrow source of *experts*, those who tow the party line
4. Demonising the enemy and
5. Using a narrow focus (the zoom lens, rather than the wide angle lens of context.)

Truth Surrounded by Lies

Sir Winston Churchill, the British prime minister during World War II declared: *“In war time, truth is so precious that she should always be attended by a bodyguard of lies.”*

Propaganda in America

Mark Twain, in 1916, described the rise of propaganda in America: *“Next the statesmen will invent cheap lies, putting the blame upon the nation that is attacked and every man will be glad of those conscience-soothing falsities and will diligently study them and refuse to examine any refutations of them; and thus he will by and by convince himself that the war is just and will thank God for the better sleep he enjoys after this process of grotesque self-deception.”*

Nazi Propaganda

Many people know that Joseph Goebbels used propaganda to advance the aims of the National Socialist regime of Adolf Hitler. What few people realise is that Nazi propaganda was based and modelled upon Allied propaganda against Germany in WWI. Joseph Goebbels was an ardent student of American public relations pioneer Edward Bernays.

Psychology and Social Science

Bernays based his methodology on the social science researches of French psychologist Gustav Le Bon in his 1895 book: *The Psychology of the Crowd*; and on Sigmund Freud’s 1922 book: *The Analysis of the Ego and Group Psychology*, as well as the research of Russian experimental psychologist Ivan Pavlov, as published in his 1926 book: *Conditioned Reflexes*.

The Committee on Public Information

Edward L. Bernays (1891-1995) was a nephew of Sigmund Freud. Bernays was a theatrical publicist who was employed by George Creel as a propagandist for the Committee on Public Information (CPI). President Woodrow Wilson of the United States, by executive order, created the Committee on Public Information in association with the Military Intelligence Bureau. The CPI was America’s propaganda office. The CPI defined propaganda as: *“The systematic, widespread dissemination, or promotion, of particular ideas, doctrines, or practices, meant to further a particular cause, or agenda and weaken that of another. It is a systematic effort to manipulate attitudes, beliefs and actions by the use of symbols.”*

Hidden Manipulators

German philosopher George Hegel, in his 1821 book: *The Philosophy of Right*, explained how in democracies the public is manipulated and persuaded by *“hidden persuaders”* and *“hidden manipulators.”* French author Anatole France, wrote: *“Democracy is run by an unseen engineer.”*

Controlling Public Opinion

Bernays based much of his methodology upon the works of Walter Lippmann, who wrote about controlling and managing public opinion. His ideas were later published in *Public Opinion* (1922) and *The Phantom Public* (1925).

Enlightening Elites

Walter Lippmann was a member of US Army Military Intelligence during World War I. Lippmann believed that most people are irrational and act chaotically. Because people are unable to independently make rational choices, they need to be guided by *“a specialised class of enlightened elites.”* Lippmann described people as: *“simple minded”* and *“sheep-like”*, incapable of formulating, or organising their desires, interests and wishes. Therefore *“enlightened elites”* can lead and educate the masses. As Lippmann put it: *“Making of one general will out of a multitude of general wishes.”* Bernays stated: *“The public must be regimented.”*

Mobilising Hate and War

In 1927, Harold D. Lasswell, a professor in Political Science at the University of Chicago, analysed the propaganda techniques employed by the Allies in WWI: *“A new and subtler instrument must weld thousands and even millions of human beings into one amalgamated mass of hate and war and hope... propaganda. It is the new dynamic of society... the fact remains that propaganda is one of the most powerful instrumentalities in the modern world. Propaganda is a reflex to the immensity, the rationality and the woefulness of the modern world.”* Lasswell explained that to: *“Mobilise the hatred of the people against their enemy, represent the opposing nation as a menacing, murderous aggressor... represent the opposing nation as satanic; it violates all the moral standards...”*

Objectives of Propaganda

Lasswell identified four major objectives of Propaganda:

1. To mobilise hatred against the enemy who must be de-humanised, portrayed as barbaric, brutal, cruel and uncivilised.
2. To preserve the friendship of Allies.
3. To preserve the friendship and if possible, to procure the cooperation of neutrals; and
4. To demoralise the enemy.

Warning Against War

Before being elected as a “*candidate for peace*” in the Presidential Elections of 1916, Woodrow Wilson warned: “*Lead this people into war and they’ll forget there was ever such a thing as tolerance. To fight, you must be brutal and ruthless and the spirit of ruthless brutality will enter into the very fibre of national life, infecting the congress, the courts, the policeman on the beat, the man in the street.*” In January of 1916, Wilson stated: “*This is a government of the people and this people is not going to choose war.*”

Reversal of Policy

After being elected, under the slogan of “*he has kept us out of the war,*” Woodrow Wilson established the Committee on Public Information which forged the nation (which was overwhelmingly opposed to intervention) into a situation where, if anyone believed that America’s entry into Europe’s war was a mistake, then they were branded a *traitor!*

Changing Perspectives

More than 8 million German-Americans lived in the USA and many were sympathetic to the cause of their homeland. One third of Americans were immigrants. Most Americans were not connected to the European conflict by blood, or capital and were not interested in waging war overseas. The Committee on Public Information (CPI) developed into the most formidable propaganda apparatus in history. A muck-raking journalist, George Creel, was appointed to lead the CPI. With a phenomenal budget, the CPI recruited from the best of business, media, academia and the art world. The CPI blended advertising techniques with a sophisticated understanding of human psychology.

Democratic Propaganda

It was the first time that a modern government disseminated propaganda on such a large scale. Although propaganda came to be linked with totalitarian regimes such as the Soviet Union and Red China, it is a fact of history that it first emerged in a democratic state. Although, as a journalist, George Creel had been an outspoken critic of censorship, the CPI immediately took steps to limit conflicting information. With the Espionage Act and Sedition Act *Voluntary Guidelines* were enforced on the news media and ensured that the mass media in the United States was flooded with pro-war material and perspectives. On any given week more than 20,000 newspaper columns were filled with material gleaned from CPI press releases.

Mobilising the Masses

The CPI created a Division of Syndicated Features and recruited the help of leading novelists, short story writers and essayists to present the pro-war position in popular digestible format, reaching 12 million readers a month. The Division of Pictorial Publicity had at its disposal the most talented advertising illustrators and cartoonists of the time. Powerful posters painted in patriotic colours presented compelling images throughout the country. The poster propaganda motivated millions to enlist in the army and navy, or buy Liberty bonds. The Division of Films ensured that the war was promoted in the cinema. The Hollywood film industry wholeheartedly supported the war effort with movie titles like: *The Kaiser – The Beast of Berlin, Wolves of Kultur, To Hell with the Kaiser* and *Perishing’s Crusaders!*

Propaganda Changes Attitudes

The cause of the Allies was creatively publicised in every available communication channel, including pulpits. Lasswell pointed out that propaganda wins wars, with “*words, pictures, songs, parades and many similar devices...*” by the “*manipulation of collective attitudes.*”

Emotional Appeal

CPI propaganda showed the way for future propaganda agencies by appealing to the heart, not the mind. “*Emotional agitation*” and “*skilful manipulation*” made use of manufactured atrocity stories and simplistic slogans such as: “*Make the world safe for Democracy!*” Will Irwin, a member of the CPI, wrote after the war: “*We never told the whole truth – not by any manner of means.*” G. S. Viereck quoted a Military Intelligence officer who declared: “*You can’t tell them the truth.*” Victories were routinely manufactured by American military authorities, while defeats were suppressed. Dishonesty was encouraged.

Sentimentality

The analysts attributed the failure of German propaganda in America to the fact that: “*It emphasised logic over passion*”. As Count von Bernstorff observed: “*The outstanding characteristic of the average American is rather a great, though superficial, sentimentality.*” The factual German Press releases failed to grasp this.

Altering Perceptions

As Lasswell observed: “*So great are the psychological resistances to war in modern nations that every war must appear to be a war of defence against a menacing, murderous aggressor. There must be no ambiguity about who the public is to hate.*”

Made Up Atrocity Stories

Bernays openly admitted that he and his colleagues used made-up stories to provoke the hate and fear necessary to raise war-bonds and recruits for the war. Some of their stories, such as a bathtub full of eyeballs and children being killed by the enemy were actually recycled stories from previous conflicts.

Propaganda Kills

So effective was the anti-German propaganda of the CPI in the USA that Dachshunds had to be renamed, 14 states banned the teaching, or speaking, of German in their public schools. Mobs assaulted American immigrants from Germany. At least one man, Robert Prager, a German coal miner, was lynched by an angry mob in Illinois.

Appealing to Idealists

The CPI recognised that while emotional appeals and simplistic stereotypes of the enemy could influence many, the intellectuals and pacifists needed different motivation. To them American military intervention in Europe was described as: “*a campaign to end warfare forever and establish a league of nations.*” To industrialists the war was modified as a conflict to destroy the competition of German industry. The propagandist does not need to ask if it is true, but merely, “*does it work?*”

The Value of Propaganda in Peacetime

In the final months of 1918, a war-weary American public ousted the Democrats who had led them into WWI. The Republican majority in Congress brought the CPI under increasing scrutiny. The director of CPI's foreign division later reported: “*The history of propaganda in the war would scarcely be worthy of consideration here, but for one fact - it did not stop with the Armistice. No indeed! The methods invented and tried out in war were too valuable for the uses of governments, factions and special interests.*”

Regimenting the Public Mind

Edward Bernays took the techniques he had learnt in the CPI to Madison Avenue and became an outspoken proponent of propaganda as a tool for democratic governments. “*It was of course the astounding success of propaganda during the war that opened the eyes of the intelligent few in all departments of life to the possibilities of regimenting the public mind.*” (*Propaganda*, by Edward Bernays, 1928)

Subverting Society

Most Americans came to realise that they had been lied to and manipulated by deceit disguised as news. Many sought to pin complete responsibility for America's involvement in the ruinous World War on “*hate mongering militarists in the CPI.*” However, as one noted: “*Ultimately their guilt is less important than the questions their activities raised about the role of propaganda in a democratic society.*” The whole theory of democratic society was rooted in the belief that free citizens could form their own opinions about the issues of the day to decide their collective destiny. Freedom of speech, freedom of opinion, freedom of association, freedom of thought and freedom of religion are fundamental necessities for any democratic process.

Is Propaganda Compatible with Freedom?

However, during the First World War, America's political leaders decided that their citizens were not making the correct decisions, quickly enough. So they flooded the channels of communication with dishonest messages that were designed to stir up emotions and provoke hatred of their long time trading partner, Germany. The war came to an end. But the propaganda did not. Today many who espouse the ideals of democracy behave like dictators and propagandists. The question is whether propaganda is compatible with freedom. Propaganda clearly undermines a population's ability to think clearly and critically about world events. Simplistic, emotional appeals undermine logic and reason.

Discerning Between Information and Disinformation

Students of propaganda soon noted that while the CPI was the largest propaganda operation to that date, it was not actually the first such deception operation. Shortly after the end of the American Civil War (or War Between the States) journalist Colburn Adams wrote: “*The future historian of the late war will have a very difficult task to perform... sifting the truth from falsehood as it appears in official records.*”

Newspaper Wars

Two prominent newspapermen took the credit for leading America into the Spanish-American war of 1898. William Randolph Hearst (1863 – 1951) and Joseph Pulitzer, editorially clamoured for US military intervention against Spain. Through disinformation and media manipulation these newspaper tycoons induced the United States to wage an unnecessary war against Spain. Sensational, inflammatory and propagandistic articles and editorials in Pulitzer's *World* and Hearst's *Journal* succeeded in inciting war hysteria and public enthusiasm for war with Spain.

Organising a War

Randolf Hearst famously sent artist Frederick Remington and other *Journal* correspondents to report on the Civil War in Cuba. When Remington reported: “*Everything is quiet. There is no trouble here. There will be no war. I wish to return.*” Hearst sent the following famous telegram in reply: “*Please remain. You furnish the pictures and I’ll furnish the war.*”

Inciting Conflict

Pulitzer and Hearst published inaccurate coverage, rumour, subterfuge, hearsay and outright fictitious reports to drum up a feverous public demand for war. On 15 February 1898, the US Battleship *Maine* blew up in Havana harbour. The cause of this explosion was never determined, but the immediate US media reaction was to blame Spain. Pulitzer and Hearst clamoured for war with titles such as: “*Maine explosion caused by bomb, or torpedo?*” Later Hearst’s *Journal* ran the headline: “*How do you like the Journals’ war?*”

The Father of Spin

After WWI, Edward Bernays pioneered Public Relations (PR) and became known as *The Father of Spin*. As the PR consultant for the American Tobacco Company, he campaigned to convince American women that they should smoke Lucky Strike cigarettes (*the torches of freedom*) to emancipate themselves!

Public Relations

Today American businesses spend trillions of dollars on marketing. PR firms employ over 150,000 workers.

Adolf Hitler on Propaganda

In *Mein Kampf*, Adolf Hitler analysed Allied propaganda techniques used during the First World War: “*The art of propaganda led in understanding the emotional ideas of the masses and finding, through a psychologically correct form, the way to the attention and then to the heart, of the masses. ...the purpose of propaganda is ...to convince ... the masses ...its effect for the most part must be aimed at the emotions.... The war propaganda of the English and the Americans was psychologically sound. By representing the Germans to their own people as Barbarians and Huns, they prepared the individual for the terrors of war... all effective propaganda must be limited to a very few points and must harp on these in slogans until the last member of the public understands what you want him to understand by your slogan... to be a leader means to be able to move the masses... the intelligence of the masses is small. Their forgetfulness is great. They must be told the same thing a thousand times.*”

Tactics of Propaganda

The tactics of propaganda have been analysed by numerous studies. Professor Johann Galtung listed some of the tactics used in propaganda, including:

1. **Decontextualizing violence:** Focusing on the irrational without looking at the reasons...
2. **Dualism:** Reducing the number of parties in a conflict to two, (when often more are involved.)
3. **Manichaeism:** Portraying one side as good and demonising the other as evil.
4. **Armageddon:** Presenting violence as inevitable, omitting alternatives.
5. **Confusion:** Focusing only on the conflict arena, but not on the forces and factors that influence the violence.
6. **Never explaining why** there are acts of revenge and spirals of violence.
7. **Failure to explore the causes** of escalation and the impact of media coverage itself.
8. **Failure to explore the goals of outside interventionists**, especially big powers and bankers.
9. **Failure to explore peace proposals** and offer images of peaceful outcomes.
10. **Confusing** cease fires and **negotiations with actual peace** and
11. **Omitting reconciliation** as a viable option.

Distorting Perspectives

Propaganda does not need to be true, as long as it is plausible. Sometimes it can tell the truth, but withhold the point of view from the other side to create a distorted perspective.

Preparing a Nation for War

British journalist, Phillip Knightley, identified the four stages in preparing a nation for war:

1. The Crisis: *Negotiations are failing! We’re on the brink of war! War is inevitable!*
2. The Demonization of the enemy leader.
3. The Demonization of the enemy as individuals.
4. Atrocities: Even making up stories to whip up and strengthen emotional reactions.

Betrayal of Trust

Knightley observed: “*The media demands that we trust it, but too often that trust has been betrayed.*”

Propaganda Strategies

Miren Gutierrez of Inter Press Service summarised propaganda strategies as follows:

Incompleteness

Inaccuracy

Driving the agenda

Milking the story

Exploiting that we want to believe the best about ourselves

Perception management

Reinforcing existing attitudes and

Simple repetitious and emotional phrases.

Words are Weapons

Words are weapons in warfare. Propaganda involves word games. Name calling of the target nation by labelling people, groups and institutions in a negative manner.

Glittering Generalities

Glittering generality with regard to allies, labelling their people, groups and institutions in a positive manner.

Euphemisms

Euphemisms are used to pacify the audience with bland meanings and connotations, such as *pacification*, *technical incursion*, etc. Civilian casualties are referred to as: *collateral damage*. Murder is replaced with: *liquidation*. Terror bombing of cities is called: *saturation bombing*, or *strategic bombing campaign*. Starvation of civilian populations is called an *economic blockade*, or *sanctions*. Looting of farms and murder of farmers is called: *dekulakisation*, or *land reform*. Racial decriminalisation is called: *Black Economic Empowerment* and *Affirmative Action*. Sexual perversion is called *Alternative Lifestyles*.

False Connections

False connections are used to transfer symbols and imagery of positive institutions to strengthen the acceptance of the cause. Making use of testimonies from individuals not qualified to make the claims made (for example having sportsmen advise on how one should vote in a Referendum!).

Ordinary Appeals

Special appeals include: the “*everybody’s doing it, join the bandwagon*” argument, through words designed to heighten, or exploit fear and an appeal to ordinary citizens by leaders doing ordinary things that the viewer can identify with.

Thought Control

In 1921, American journalist Walter Lippmann said that the art of democracy requires the “*manufacture of consent.*” George Orwell described it as “*thought control.*” As democracies cannot control people by force, it controls them by influencing what they think, how they think and what they think about. Propaganda is to democracies what violence is to dictatorships.

Gullibility of the Public

Propaganda tends to work because people wish to believe the best about themselves and their country. It is often very hard to believe that our own leaders could possibly lie to us! From how the media portray them, they seem such likeable people!

Crowd Psychology

During the Nuremberg Trials, General Hermann Göring was reported to have said: “*It is always a simple matter to drag the people along, whether it be a democracy, or a fascist dictatorship, or a parliament, or a communist dictatorship... Voice, or no voice, the people can always be brought to the bidding of the leaders. That is easy. All you have to do is tell them that they are being attacked and denounce the peacemakers for lack of patriotism and exposing their country to danger. It works the same in any country.*”

Perception Management

John Rendon, the Founder of the Rendon Group, a PR Agency, told cadets at the US Air Force Academy: “*I am a politician... who uses communication to meet public policy... objectives. In fact I am an information warrior and*

a perception manager. Did you ever stop to wonder how the people of Kuwait City, after being held hostage for seven long and painful months, were able to get hand-held American flags? Well, you now know the answer. That was one of my jobs.”

Manipulating Public Opinion

Another propaganda tactic is character assassination. Smear tactics are used to discredit, or destroy the reputation of someone perceived as an obstacle to the policy makers. The calculated manipulation of public opinion to serve political and ideological interests is achieved by appealing to the emotions to create reality which demands the action desired by the policy makers.

Holocaust in Rwanda

In *Holocaust in Rwanda* I documented the ease with which the orchestrators of the genocide in Rwanda confused international journalists and abused the national media to mobilise the unprecedented concentration of carnage. The massacres were meticulously organised in advance. The MRND government of Rwanda manipulated the international media by portraying the killings as “spontaneous”, “tribal anarchy”, “uncontrolled tribal killing”, “tribalism”, the result of *the war*.

Disinformation

A smokescreen of disinformation allowed the killers to proceed with their diabolical plans and kill over 800,000 people in a mere six weeks. They isolated their victims by imposing a news blackout, cutting telephone links, establishing a dense network of roadblocks and imposing a nationwide curfew. By cutting communications and restricting travel, they isolated their victims and sought to stifle the flow of news. They also timed the genocide to be launched on 6 April 1994, when most African correspondents were in South Africa for the Mandela elections. With most foreign news distracted by events in South Africa, the mass murderers in Rwanda were able to play *the humanitarian card*, pleading for emergency aid, all while they were engaged in genocide.

Mobilising Mass Murder

While deceiving the international news media, the MRND mobilised their national news media to denigrate all the targeted Tutsi tribe as “foreigners, Hamitic invaders, cockroaches, racial supremacists” who needed to be “returned to Ethiopia” by having their bodies thrown into the Nyabarongo River. Wild rumours were recklessly spread by Radio RTLM accusing the Tutsis of sinister plots. Popular poets and songwriters composed songs to provoke the majority Hutu tribe to hate their Tutsi neighbours. By totally dominating the mass media, the Hutu extremists were able to mould minds and fill them with hatred and a lust for blood. Hundreds-of-thousands of Hutu people were motivated to murder their neighbours. Hutu teachers murdered Tutsi students. Hutu doctors and nurses murdered Tutsi patients. Hutu priests and bishops murdered Tutsi congregants. The Holocaust in Rwanda was yet another proof that propaganda kills.

Dehumanising the Enemy

Many of the massacres of prisoners and atrocities committed against civilians in WWI and WWII, including the systematic saturation bombing of cities, would not have been possible without the demonization of the targeted enemy and their civilian population by propaganda. The farm invasions in Zimbabwe were preceded by state propaganda vilifying whites in general and farmers in particular. The Mau Mau murders in Kenya and the Simba massacres in the Congo were also motivated and mobilised by propaganda which dehumanised the targeted white farmers and missionaries. The incessant, anti-white propaganda in South Africa has led to over 4,000 brutal murders of white farmers in some of the most torturous ways possible. Songs such as “Kill the Boer! Kill the farmer!” sung by prominent ANC leaders are like pouring petrol on a fire. The fact is that propaganda changes perceptions and people. **Propaganda kills.**

The Truth Sets Free

That is why it is absolutely essential that we know the truth of history to recognise the lies of propaganda. We need to study the truth in the Bible so that we can be freed from the deceptions of the world.

LIES WE MUST REFUSE TO BELIEVE

“Thus says the Lord: ‘Cursed is the man who trusts in man and makes flesh his strength, whose heart departs from the Lord. For he shall be like a shrub in the desert, and shall not see when good comes, but shall inhabit the parched places in the wilderness, in a salt land which is not inhabited. Blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord, and whose hope is the Lord. For he shall be like a tree planted by the waters, which spreads out its roots by the river and will not fear when heat comes; but its leaf will be green and will not be anxious in the year of drought, nor will cease from yielding fruit. The heart is deceitful above all things and desperately wicked; who can know it? I, the Lord, search the heart, I test the mind, even to give every man according to his ways, according to the fruit of his doings?’” Jeremiah 17:5-10

Lies of Our Age

“Man is good by nature, but corrupted by societies!”

Actually it is man's depravity which corrupts society.

“Every man possesses an innate moral goodness!”

It would be more accurate to say that there is bad in the best of us because we are fallen creation.

“Happiness is the measure and goal of our lives.”

No it is not. God's Word, God's Will and God's work is the measure and goal of our lives!

“Only fools restrain their desires.”

Actually it is only a fool who gives into desires for selfish pride, greed and lust.

“He who trusts in his own heart is a fool, but whoever walks wisely will be delivered.” Proverbs 28:26

“Everything is relative.”

No, that is not true. There is objective truth and reality. Without the God of the Bible, who has a mind and is rational. That statement would not even be possible!

“All you need is love!”

What do you mean by love? Biblical love is unselfish giving, duty, integrity, doing the right thing, loving God and loving our neighbour (1 Corinthians 13:4-7).

“Only material and economic change can produce a social change.”

Not at all. Only regenerate lives, transformed hearts and renewed minds can change society.

Lies Satan Wants You to Believe

“I am a good person!”

Jesus said no one is good except God alone (Mark 10:18). When we evaluate ourselves in the light of God's Ten Commandments, recognising that Jesus is the standard, no one can deceive themselves by claiming that: *“I am a very good person!”*

“If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us... If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar and His Word is not in us.” 1 John 1:8,10

“...truly the hearts of the sons of men are full of evil; and madness is in their hearts...” Ecclesiastes 9:3

“For from within, out of the heart of men proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, thefts, murders, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lewdness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness.” Mark 7:21-22

The Greatest Fault is to be Aware of None

Dr. Martin Luther was overwhelmed by the burden of his sin. When asked, which pope caused him the greatest trouble, Luther answered: *“pope self.”* He maintained that the *pope* that sits on the throne of his own selfish nature gave him far more trouble than all the popes in Rome.

Mixed Motives

Dr. David Livingstone, in his Journals, expressed his frustration that even when he was engaged in the best of actions, it was with mixed motives.

We Are Our Own Worst Enemy

When Charles Spurgeon was asked which of his 5,600 members gave him the most trouble, he responded: “*Charles Spurgeon!*” When asked how it was that he also had a member by his own name, he explained that he referred to himself. No other member of Metropolitan Tabernacle had given him more trouble than he himself had. The fact is that we are our own worst enemy.

“I Cannot Change!”

On the other extreme of the spectrum is the claim: “*I cannot change!*”

However, the persecutor of the Church, Saul of Tarsus, became the Missionary of the Church: The Apostle Paul.

Bernard Nathanson, once head of the National Abortion Rights Action League, became an avid pro-life activist and the producer of *The Silent Screams* documentary film.

Before my conversion, I was a shy, quiet, introvert. After my conversion, I became an Arminian, antinomian, dispensationalist, rapture fever, end times enthusiast. I was also a pacifist and one who taught that you should not get involved in politics. I was convinced that we were living in the last days, so I was even negative about marriage and children. God has changed and transformed me continually on this adventure of discipleship to where I am now a Reformed, Post-Millennial Missionary, father of four children and still being challenged to change in response to the renewing of the mind through studying the Word of God.

Can God Forgive Me?

Then there are those who claim: “*God can never forgive me!*”

However, Church history is full of details of enemies of the Gospel and frightful criminals, even persecutors of the Church who were converted and became trophies of grace. “***Come now, and let us reason together,’ says the Lord, ‘Though your sins are like scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they are red like crimson, they shall be as wool.’***” Isaiah 1:18

Unchangeable

“*God cannot change me!*”

“For the grace of God that brings salvation has appeared to all men, teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously and Godly in the present age, looking for the blessed hope and glorious appearing of our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ, who gave Himself for us, that He might redeem us from every lawless deed and purify for Himself His own special people, zealous for good works.” Titus 2:11-14

Hopeless

“*I am done!*”

This new expression has spread like wildfire with so many people claiming about a whole host of subjects, *I am done!* Actually, God is the only One who can say when *it is finished*, when you are *done*, when you are *dismissed* and when you are *free to go!* Just as nobody may excuse themselves from the presence of the King, or Queen. That prerogative is up to the Monarch. Even more so, the King of kings and Lord and lords is the only One who can say when you truly are *done, dismissed, or free to go.*

Are Things Only Going to Deteriorate?

“*Things are always only going to get worse!*”

Well, that is just not true. There have been many bad times in history and then dramatic turning points. For example, 1517, when Dr. Martin Luther nailed the 95 *Theses* on the church door in Wittenberg. The resultant Reformation unleashed forces of Faith and freedom that the world had never before seen. Nations were transformed. The Scientific Revolution and Industrial Revolution grew out of the Protestant Reformation, creating the most productive, prosperous and free nations in the history of civilisation. The great Revivals of 1859 and 1860 transformed Western civilisation.

Impossible

“*We cannot win!*”

Well with that kind of attitude, it can become a self-fulfilling prophecy! If you think you can, or you can't, you are right! If you think you can, **you can.** If you think you can't, **you cannot.** Attitude is everything. A defeatist and negative attitude will inevitably lead to defeat.

Against All Odds

However, consider the facts of history. Against all odds, just a few hundred knights of St. John defeated over 40,000 Muslim Jihadists during the four month siege of Malta in 1565.

Against all odds Christians of Europe defeated the Turkish invaders at the siege of Vienna, 1688.

In Our Lifetime

In our own lifetime we have seen how the Tutsi *David*, defeated the Hutu *Goliath* during the Rwandan holocaust and ended the genocidal campaign in 1994.

Victory over Communism

In our own life time we have seen decisive victory over communism, the conclusion of the Cold War, the fall of the Berlin Wall, the collapse of Communism in Eastern Europe, the removal of the Iron Curtain and freedom for Eastern Europe from the prison house of nations. In 1982, Christians launched a Seven-Year Jericho Prayer March/Prayer Focus on bringing down the Berlin Wall, the Iron Curtain and opening up Eastern Europe to the Gospel.

Victory over Islam

In 2011, we witnessed the Independence of South Sudan from Islamic Sudan.

Victory over Globalism

Just in recent months, we have seen *Brexit* voting against the EU globalist agenda in Britain and the Republican victory, against all odds and against all predictions, of the mass media and the establishment in the United States.

Against the Unbeaten Foe

Just 464 Voortrekkers, against all odds, defeated over 10,000 Zulus at the Battle of Blood River. The Zulus had never before been defeated. But they were on 16 December 1838.

Remember Majuba

Nobody expected the farmers of the Transvaal to defeat the Redcoats of the British Empire, but at the Battle of Majuba, in 1881, they did.

A Vision of Victory

We have seen communism defeated and we will go on to see Islam and the New World Order defeated as well.

“Ask of Me, and I will give You the nations for Your inheritance and the ends of the earth for Your possession.”

Psalm 2:8

“All the ends of the world shall remember and turn to the Lord, and all the families of the nations shall worship before You. For the Kingdom is the Lord’s and He rules over the nations.” Psalm 22:27-28

“In His days the righteous shall flourish... He shall have dominion also from sea to sea... to the ends of the earth... His enemies will lick the dust... all kings shall fall down before Him; all nations shall serve Him.” Psalm 72:7-11

“Therefore submit to God. Resist the devil and he will flee from you.” James 4:7

“...because He who is in you is greater than he who is in the world.” 1 John 4:4

“Yet in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him who loved us.” Romans 8:37

“...’Not by might nor by power, but by My Spirit,’ says the Lord of Hosts.” Zechariah 4:6

“For the earth will be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea.” Habakkuk 2:14

Unreachable

“Some people will never change, so do not even try to share the Gospel with them.”

Church History is full of the testimonies of individuals whom Christians could not imagine ever being able to change, yet the Gospel is the power of God for the Salvation of everyone who believes. KwaSizabantu Mission was built with the conversion of witchdoctors, terrorists, murderers, gangsters and drug dealers transformed by the Grace of God.

Converted

I remember meeting Pastor Musa a ZAPU communist terrorist, who had been converted at an Evangelistic Rally, which he had intended attacking. My Father was secular and seemed very closed to the Gospel. Yet after eight years of prayer and witnessing, I saw my Father transformed by the Grace of God. We should never place limits upon the Gospel.

Helpless

"I cannot make any difference!"

I was one of those who thought and said that. When I was converted at age 17, I did not know much about anything in the Bible and felt quite helpless to make any kind of impact for the Lord at all. Yet, the challenge on the night that I was converted: *"All this our Lord Jesus Christ did for you. What have you ever done for Him?"* At that moment, 3 April 1977, I had to confess that I had done absolutely nothing, not even given thanks to Him.

Set Free to Serve Christ

Within weeks I was involved in a Scripture Union Holiday Mission. Within months I was teaching in the Sunday school, running the church book table, involved in mass Gospel literature distribution, placing Gospels of John in every home in Pinelands, putting up posters, inviting people to Evangelistic Rallies, such as the one that I had been converted at.

Called to Missions

The first Missionary who came past my congregation, I went forward and joined his Mission - Hospital Christian Fellowship. Soon I was enlisted in the South African Infantry for my two years Military service. The Bible Study and Prayer Fellowship I established grew into our Mission, Frontline Fellowship.

Crossing Borders for Christ

By 1982, I was crossing the border on my first Mission to Mozambique, Missions to Angola, Zimbabwe, Zambia, Malawi, Rwanda, Kenya, Uganda and Sudan followed. Soon there were outreaches in Eastern Europe, behind the Iron Curtain.

Salt and Light

Marches to Parliament. Mobilising opposition to the ANC's plans to declare South Africa a secular state. The 30,000 people we mobilised onto the streets of Cape Town in 1995 and 1996, compelled the government to backtrack on their declared intention of preventing churches meeting in school halls, classrooms, town halls, or any other facility *"owned"* by the state. In 1998, when the government announced their intention to close all Christian Community Radio Stations in the country, we promptly marched and persuaded the politicians to run up the white flag and recognise the rights of Christian Community Radio stations to exist. When legislation was drafted to infringe on the freedom of Christian schools and other independent private education, we mobilised thousands more to protest and persuade the politicians to back off with interfering with religious freedom. Operation Clean Sweep from 1991 to 1994 persuaded over 9,000 stores to no longer stock pornography. We should never use any excuse to justify disobedience and inactivity. ***"I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me."*** Philippians 4:13

Too Young

There are those who declare: *"I am too young for God to use me!"*

David, the shepherd boy, saw himself as the youngest, of the least. Yet God raised him up.

Jeremiah protested: ***"Ah, Lord God! Behold, I cannot speak, for I am a youth.' But the Lord said to me: 'Do not say, 'I am a youth,' for you shall go to all to whom I send you, and whatever I command you, you shall speak. Do not be afraid of their faces, for I am with you to deliver you,' says the Lord."*** Jeremiah 1:6-8.

Timothy thought that he was too young, but the Apostle Paul declared: ***"Let no one despise your youth, but be an example to the believers in word, in conduct, in love, in spirit, in faith, in purity."*** 1 Timothy 4:12.

The Apostle John and the Evangelist John Mark and so many others, are examples of young men whom God used in a dramatic way. Esther, Ruth and Mary are examples of young maidens whom God used in powerful ways.

At the beginning of our Mission, there were many who declared that I was too young, Mozambique was closed. It was too dangerous. It was the wrong time. This was the wrong way. But looking back with hindsight, it is clear that God was the One who called, led and opened doors. If God can change you, then He can use you to change things that are wrong in this world.

Too Old

Others declare: *"I am too old for God to use me!"*

Moses was 80 years old when God called him from the Burning Bush to lead His people out of Egypt. *"But Moses said to God, 'Who am I that I should go to Pharaoh, and that I should bring the children of Israel out of Egypt?"* Exodus 3:11.

“Then Moses answered and said, ‘But suppose they will not believe me or listen to my voice; suppose they say, ‘The Lord has not appeared to you.’” Exodus 4:1.

“Then Moses said to the Lord, ‘O my Lord, I am not eloquent, neither before nor since You have spoken to Your servant; but I am slow of speech and slow of tongue.’” Exodus 4:10.

“So the Lord said to him, ‘Who has made man’s mouth? Or who makes the mute, the deaf, the seeing, or the blind? Have not I, the Lord? Now therefore, go, and I will be with your mouth and teach you what you shall say.’” Exodus 4:11-12.

Caleb in his 80’s could declare: *“Give me that mountain!”* Not satisfied with the easy tasks in the valleys and flatlands, he wanted the tougher challenges of the mountains!

Grey Haired Missionaries

Frederick Baedeker was only converted to Christ in his 40’s, yet he packed the second half of his life with such strenuous journeys to evangelise Russia that would have depleted the energy of much younger and healthier men. We have seen Missionaries such as Dr. Fritz Haus, Rev. Erlo Stegen, Brother Andrew and Rev. Bill Bathman, working well into their 80’s proclaiming the Gospel, teaching, serving the Lord fervently. When Rev. Bill Bathman was in his 70’s, he undertook an Africa Overland Mission, driving 8,000km from Cape Town to our Mission base in Sudan to deliver a vehicle and supplies to the beleaguered Christians during the war.

Reject All these Excuses for Disobedience

We need to recognise that all these lies of our age and lies which we should never believe are actually excuses for disobedience. You are never too old, or too young, to make a difference and be used of God. You can change. God can forgive you. God can change you and use you for His Kingdom and for His Glory.

Do Not be Deceived

The Bible continually warns us: *“lest satan should take advantage of us; for we are not ignorant of his devices.”*
2 Corinthians 2:11

“But I fear, lest somehow, as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, so your minds may be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.” 2 Corinthians 11:3

“Whose minds the god of this age has blinded, who do not believe, lest the light of the Gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine on them.” 2 Corinthians 4:4

Spiritual Warfare

That is why we are to *“Put on the whole Armour of God that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the Heavenly places.”* Ephesians 6:11-12

Chapter 6

FALSE FLAGS, ACTIVE MEASURES, DISINFORMATION AND SUBVERSION CAMPAIGNS

“Everyone will deceive his neighbour and will not speak the truth; they have taught their tongue to speak lies; they weary themselves to commit iniquity.” Jeremiah 9:5

False Flag

The term “*False Flag*” originally referred to pirate ships which flew flags of countries as a disguise to dissuade their victims from fleeing, or preparing for battle. Sometimes the flag of another country was used in order to blame an attack incorrectly on a targeted country. Today the term *False Flag* extends way past naval encounters to include countries and organisations that organise attacks on themselves and make the attacks appear to be made by their opponents.

Providing a Pretext

In this way, false flag operations seek to give a government the desired pretext for either domestic repression, or foreign military aggression. Covert government agencies frequently use civilian organisations to carry out operations which serve government interests.

Designed to Deceive

Definition: “*False Flag operations are covert operations conducted by governments, corporations or other organisations which are designed to appear as if they are being carried out by other entities. The name is derived from the military concept of flying false colours: that is flying the flag of a country other than one’s own. False Flag operations are not limited to war and counter insurgency operations and have been used in peace time; for example, during Italy’s strategy of tension.*”

Violations of the Rules of Warfare

Although forbidden by the Geneva Convention and The Hague Rules of Warfare, False Flag Operations are pervasive. The Geneva Convention prohibits: “*the feigning of an intent to negotiate under flag of truce, or of a surrender; feigning of an incapacitation by wounds or sickness; the feigning of civilian, non-combatant status; and the feigning of protected status, by the use of signs, emblems or uniforms of the United Nations or of neutral, or other states, or parties, to the conflict.*” (Article 37). Under Article 38, it is prohibited to make improper use of the distinctive emblem of the Red Cross. Under Article 39, it is forbidden to make use of the flags, emblems, insignia or uniforms of neutral, or other, states not party to the conflict.

“You shall not steal, nor deal falsely, nor lie to one another.” Leviticus 19:11

Documented Cases of False Flag Operations

There are many documented cases of false flag attacks where a government has carried out, for political purposes, a terror attack upon their own people and then falsely blamed its targeted enemy.

“...With their tongues they have practiced deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips.” Romans 3:13

The Great Fire of Rome

In AD 64, 19 July, two thirds of the city of Rome was burned down in a huge fire. Senior Roman leaders, including the Roman consul, Cassius Dio and historian, Suetonius, confirmed that the Emperor Nero sent out arsonists to start the fire because the Roman Senate had just rejected Nero’s application to clear 300 acres in central Rome so that he could build his extravagant palace complex. Nero then falsely blamed the Christians for starting the fire. This justified rounding up, brutally torturing and murdering many hundreds of Christians, including the apostles Peter and Paul.

“The truthful lip shall be established forever, but a lying tongue is but for a moment.” Proverbs 12:19

“Remember the Maine – Wage War on Spain”

In 1898 the highly suspicious explosion which sank the USS Maine warship in Havana Harbour, killing over 260 American seamen, sparked the Spanish American War which provided the USA the pretext to destroy the Spanish fleet and seize much territory, including the Philippines and Cuba.

“He who works deceit shall not dwell within my house; he who tells lies shall not continue in my presence.”
Psalm 101:7

The Manchurian Incident

On 18 September 1931, Japanese troops set off a small explosion on a train track and blamed it on China, in order to justify their invasion of Manchuria. This is known as the Mukden Incident, or the Manchurian Incident.

The Pearl Harbour Myth

On Sunday morning, 7 December 1941, the Japanese launched a surprise attack on the US Fleet at Pearl Harbour, destroying the Pacific Fleet and forcing the United States into World War Two. Well, that is what we were taught at school. However, except for the date, everything about that narrative is a myth. The attack was not such a surprise and the Pacific Fleet was actually far from destroyed as the aircraft carriers were conveniently absent. Actually, the United States government had done everything they could to bring about that attack. US Ambassador to Japan, Joseph Grew, on 27 January 1941, wired Washington that Japan was preparing a surprise attack on the US Fleet at Pearl Harbour. 24 September 1941, a despatch from Japanese Naval Intelligence to Japan's consulate general in Honolulu was deciphered. The transmission was a request for the grid of exact locations of US Naval ships in Pearl Harbour. Yet Washington chose not to share this information with the officers responsible for security at Pearl Harbour.

The Expected Attack

On 26 November the main body of the Japanese strike force (consisting of 6 aircraft carriers, 2 battleships, 3 cruisers, 9 destroyers, 8 tankers, 23 submarines and 5 midget submarines), departed Japan for Hawaii. Despite the myth of strict radio silence, US Naval Intelligence intercepted many despatches. Tokyo sent over 1,000 radio transmissions to the Attack Fleet before it reached Hawaii. The despatches left no doubt that Pearl Harbour was the target. Even on the night before the attack, US Naval Intelligence decoded a message pointing to Sunday morning, 7 December as the deadline for the attack. The message was delivered to military high command in Washington DC more than four hours before the attack on Pearl Harbour commenced. However this information was still withheld from the commanders at Pearl Harbour.

Eight-Step Plan to Provoke War

Having failed to provoke Germany by already selling over US\$50 billion in war supplies to Great Britain, the Soviet Union, France and China, FDR switched focus to Japan. On 7 October 1940, one of Roosevelt's military advisors, Lieutenant Commander Arthur McCollum, detailed an eight-step plan to provoke Japan into attacking United States. Over the next year, FDR implemented all eight of the recommended provocative actions, including complete oil embargo against Japan and effective economic warfare.

*"These are the things you shall do: **Speak each man the truth to his neighbour; give judgment in your gates for truth, justice and peace;**" Zechariah 8:16*

The Mainila Incident

Soviet leader Nikita Khrushchev admitted that the Soviet Union's Red Army shelled the Russian village of Mainila in 1939, in order to blame the attack on Finland, as a pretext for launching their Winter War against Finland. Russian president, Boris Yeltsin later confirmed that Russia had been the aggressor in the Winter War and that the shelling of Mainila was a false flag operation.

The Katyn Massacres

Russian leaders, Boris Yeltsin and Vladimir Putin admitted that Soviet dictator, Josef Stalin, ordered the NKVD secret police to execute over 22,000 Polish officers and civilians in 1940 and falsely blame it on the Germans.

"Let the lying lips be put to silence, which speak insolent things proudly and contemptuously against the righteous." Psalm 31:18

Defenders of Palestine

The British government admitted bombing 5 ships transporting Jews from Europe to Palestine between 1946 and 1948, setting up a fake group, *the Defenders of Palestine*, to falsely claim responsibility for these bombings.

Bombings in Egypt

In 1954, Israel admitted launching a terrorist cell to operate in Egypt planting bombs in several buildings, including US Diplomatic facilities, leaving behind false "*evidence*" implicating Arabs as the culprits. When one of the bombs detonated prematurely, this enabled the Egyptians to identify the bombers and several of the Israeli agents confessed to this false flag operation.

Operation Ajax

The CIA admitted hiring Iranians in the 1950's to pose as communists and stage bombings in Iran, in order to turn the country against its elected prime minister.

Turkish Bombings

The Turkish prime minister admitted that the Turkish government carried out the 1955 bombing of a Turkish Consulate in Greece, also damaging the nearby birthplace of the founder of modern Turkey, blaming it on Greece, for the purpose of inciting and justifying anti-Greek violence.

Syrian Deception Operation

British prime minister, Harold MacMillan, admitted that both he and American president, Dwight Eisenhower, approved a CIA-MI6 plan in 1957 to carry out attacks in Syria and blame it on the Syrian government, as a way of effecting regime change.

Terror Bombings in Europe

A former Italian prime minister, an Italian Judge and the former Head of Italian Counter Intelligence, admitted that NATO, with the help of the Pentagon and CIA, carried out terror bombings in Italy and other European countries in the 1950s in order to rally peoples' support for their governments in Europe. *"We had to attack civilians, people, women, children, innocent people, unknown people, far removed from any political gain. The reason was quite simple. They were supposed to force these people, the Italian public, to turn to the state to ask for greater security."* These terror attacks were carried out in Italy, France, Belgium, Denmark, Germany, Greece, Netherlands, Norway, Portugal, United Kingdom and other countries.

"...It is all full of lies and robbery. Its victim never departs." Nahum 3:1

The Gulf of Tonkin Incident

The National Security Agency (NSA) admitted that it lied about what happened in the Gulf of Tonkin incident in 1964, manipulating data to make it look like North Vietnamese boats fired on US Battleships. This was to create a justification for American involvement in the Vietnam War.

Bombing of USS Liberty

On 8 June 1967, unmarked Israeli fighter jets and an unmarked torpedo boat, attacked the USS Liberty off the coast of Egypt with cannon fire, napalm, rockets and torpedoes. The attack started by jamming the ships' emergency distress channel. They then targeted the communications to the ship, to prevent the Americans radioing for help. Sailors attempting to escape in life rafts were shot, to prevent any survivors from escaping. 34 Crewmen were killed and 174 wounded. Admiral Thomas Moorer, former Chairman of the Joint Chief of Staff, after a year investigating the incident, concluded that the attempted sinking of the USS Liberty was a failed false flag attack. Israel was attempting to blame Egypt for the attack, to persuade America to join in on their attack on Egypt. President Lyndon Johnson actually despatched nuclear armed fighter jets to drop nuclear bombs on Cairo, Egypt. These were only recalled when Johnson realised that it was the Israelis, not the Egyptians who had fired on the USS Liberty.

"... This is a nation that does not obey the voice of the Lord their God nor receive correction. Truth has perished and has been cut off from their mouth." Jeremiah 7:28

False Flag Attacks on Cyprus

A Turkish general admitted that Turkish forces burned down a mosque on the Island of Cyprus in the 1970s to blame it on their Greek Christian enemy. He explained: *"In special ways, certain acts of sabotage are staged and blamed on the enemy to increase public resistance. We did this in Cyprus; we even burned down a mosque."*

"You shall destroy those who speak falsehood; the Lord abhors the bloodthirsty and deceitful man." Psalm 5:6

Setting Up Gaddafi

A Mossad agent admitted that, in 1984, Israeli agents planted a radio transmitter in Gaddafi's compound in Tripoli, Libya, which broadcast fake terrorist transmissions, in order to frame Gadhafi as a supporter of anti-American terrorism and convince US President Ronald Reagan to bomb Libya.

"Deliver my soul, O Lord, from lying lips and from a deceitful tongue." Psalm 120:2

Massacres in Algeria

An Algerian diplomat and several officers of the Algerian Army admitted that, in the 1990s, the Algerian army frequently massacred Algerian civilians to blame on opponents of the state.

Provoking Riots in Indonesia

An Indonesian fact finding team investigating violent riots which occurred in 1998, determined that elements of their own military had been involved in the riots, some of which were deliberately provoked.

The Oklahoma City Bombing

19 April 1995 the Alfred P. Murrah Federal Building was destroyed in a devastating bombing which collapsed about one third of the building, killing 168 people (including 15 children), injuring more than 680 other people. The bomb blasts damaged 324 other buildings within a 16 block radius, shattered glass in 258 nearby buildings and burned out 86 vehicles. Damage estimated at US\$652 million. *A Noble Lie* documents the web of deceit, inconsistencies and impossibility of the official version and presents damning evidence of a False Flag operation and cover up.

Some Examples of Proven False Flag Operations

Other False Flag attacks include:

the murder of the Turkish prime minister in 1960;

the bombings in Portugal in 1966;

the Piazza Fontana massacre in Italy of 1969;

the terror attacks in Turkey of 1971;

the Peteano bombings of Italy, 1972;

the shootings in Brescia, Italy and a bombing on an Italian train, 1974;

the shootings in Istanbul, Turkey, 1977;

the Atocha massacre in Madrid, Spain, 1977;

the abduction and murder of the Italian Prime Minister, 1978;

the bombing of the Bologna railway station, Italy, 1980;

the blowing up of a Russian apartment building in 1999 and blaming it on the Chechens;

the 2001 Anthrax attacks in the US;

the Indonesian Military killing of American teachers in Papua New Guinea and blaming it on a Papuan separatist group, in order to get that group listed as a terrorist organisation.

Saudi Controlled Chechen Terrorists

The highly respected writer for the Telegraph, Ambrose Evans – Pritchard, reported that the head of Saudi Intelligence, Prince Bandar, admitted that the Saudi government “*controls the Chechen terrorists.*”

Creating Chaos in Ukraine

Ukrainian officials admitted that Ukrainian snipers fired on both sides, to create maximum chaos, which led to the Ukrainian coup and civil war.

Chemical Weapons Attacks in Syria

8 April 2014, Pulitzer Prize winning investigative reporter, Seymour Hersh, published an expose revealing that the Turkish government carried out the chemical weapons attacks blamed on the Syrian government. Although a member of NATO, Turkey provided the Sarin chemical weapons. US president Obama attempted to use this pretext to launch America into full scale war against Syria. High level US intelligent officers confirmed that it was the US and Turkish-backed Rebels, not the Syrian government, which carried out the chemical weapons attacks.

“Lying lips are an abomination to the Lord, but those who deal truthfully are His delight.” Proverbs 12:22

Were the 9-11 Attacks Also False Flags?

There are those who claim that US government agencies were involved in the 9-11 terror attacks on Washington DC and New York City.

Inciting Terrorism

David Steel, formerly of US Marine Corp and the CIA, testified: “*Most terrorists are false flag terrorists, or are created by our own security forces. In the United States, every single terrorist incident we have had has been a false flag, or has been an informant pushed on by the FBI. In fact, we now have citizens taking out restraining orders against FBI informants that are trying to incite terrorism. We’ve become a lunatic asylum.*”

Propaganda Campaign

British Foreign Secretary, Robin Cook, declared: “*The truth is, there is no Islamic Army, or terrorist army called Al-Qaeda and any informed Intelligence officer knows this. But there is a propaganda campaign to make the public believe in the presence of an intensified entity representing the devil, only in order to drive TV watchers to accept a unified international leadership for a ‘war against terrorism’. The country behind this propaganda is the United States.*”

Orchestrated Hysteria

“Terrorism has replaced communism as the rationale for the militarisation of America, for military adventures abroad and for the suppression of civil liberties at home. It serves the same purpose, serving to create hysteria.”
Howard Zinn

Global Criminal Enterprise Supporting Terrorism

“We are dealing with a criminal undertaking at a global level... and there is an ongoing war, it is led by the United States. It may be carried out by a number of proxy countries, which are obeying orders from Washington. The global war on terrorism is a US undertaking which is fake. It is based on fake premises. It tells us that somehow America and the Western world are going after a fictitious enemy, the Islamic State, when in fact, the Islamic State is fully supported and financed by Western military alliance and Americas allies in the Persian Gulf... They say these Muslims are terrorists, but it just so happens that these terrorists are Made in America... the global war on terrorism is a fabrication, a big lie and a crime against humanity.” Dr. Michael Chossudovsky, University of Ottawa’s Emetrias Professor of Economics (speech delivered at the International Conference of the New World Order).

Follow the Money

If one follows the money, one can see that the people with the most to gain from these attacks and wars occupied the key military and civilian positions and were instrumental in the covering up of the crimes.

National Insanity

“Study the history of false flag attacks used to manipulate the minds of the people! In individuals, insanity is rare, but in groups, parties, nations and epochs it is the rule!” Friederich Nietzsche

“The fear of the Lord is clean, enduring forever; the judgments of the Lord are true and righteous altogether.”
Psalm 19:9

How to Persuade People to Support War

“Why of course the people don’t want war, but after all it is the leaders of the country who determine the policy and it is always a simple matter to drag the people along, whether it is a democracy, or a fascist dictatorship, or a parliament, or a communistic dictatorship... Voice, or no voice, the people can always be brought to do the bidding of the leaders. That is easy. All you have to do is to tell them they are being attacked and denounce the pacifists for a lack of patriotism and exposing the country to danger. It works the same in any country.” Hermann Goering

Terrorism Prepares the Way for Oppression

“The easiest way to gain control of a country is to carry out acts of terror. The public will clamour for such laws if their personal security is threatened.” Josef Stalin

“The heart is deceitful above all things and desperately wicked; who can know it?” Jeremiah 17:9

Dr. Peter Hammond

Frontline Fellowship

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725

Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021-689-4480

mission@frontline.org.za

www.FrontlineMissionSA.org

www.ReformationSA.org

www.hmsschoolofchristianjournalism.org

Recommended Resources:

[*Katyn*](#), dramatic Polish film with English subtitles

[*A Noble Lie*](#), Oklahoma City 1995 video documentary

[*Agenda 2*](#) video documentary.

HOW THE NEW WORLD ORDER IS HIJACKING CIVILISATION

Constructive Chaos

The New World Order has used wars, economic depressions, recessions and population control to undermine Western civilisation and bring about their Globalist Agenda.

Demographic Engineering

Through aggressive population control tactics, promoting birth control, abortion, sterilisations and massive propaganda of “*Overpopulation*” the globalists have dramatically brought down the population of Europeans and Americans. Then, by betraying stable governments in Africa, Asia and South America, and bringing about economic collapse, a vast movement of refugee populations has been stimulated into Europe, North America, South Africa and Australia. By dramatically decreasing populations of those countries traditionally Christian and exploding the populations of mostly pagan and anti-Christian races the goal is a dramatic change in demographics and the death of the West.

Eurabia

The sharp decline of the birth rate of Europeans and the massive influx of Muslim immigrants into Europe, for example, is hoped to bring about a transformation of Europe into Eurabia. The goal in all of this is a world population more amenable to manipulation and control by the Globalists for their New World Order.

Population Control

From America being a mostly Protestant Christian nation of people from a European background, the promotion of population control methods to suppress the growth of the white Americans and stimulating a huge influx of immigrants from Third World nations have brought America to the position where the demographics have been radically altered.

Neutralising the Church

To distract and neutralise the Christian Church, false doctrines and heresies have been vigorously promoted. Pacifism has been promoted and a rapture fever obsession with end time’s prophecies has greatly distracted many Christians.

Defeatism and Escapism

Antinomianism has gutted the Church of the Law of the Lord which is perfect, which converts the soul. Defeatism and escapism have neutralised many Churches. Worldly music, age segregated services, youth groups which entertain rather than educate, have further undermined the Christian resistance to the New World Order.

Derailing the Church

Discernment is plainly at a low ebb in the average Western church. Sensationalism, materialism, idolatrous elevating of high profile tele-evangelists and faith healers have side-tracked many believers from fulfilling the Great Commission.

Hijacking Education

Most Christians barely notice that secular humanists have hijacked the schools and have continued to send their children to, what are effectively, anti-Christian brainwashing institutions. Theological seminaries have generally been infiltrated by liberal Theologians and those who hold to Theistic Evolution. The resulting undermining of Biblical Christianity throughout many denominations is analogise to a cancer working its way through, what used to be, a healthy body.

The Reformation Roots of Western Civilization

History testifies how God has blessed and used the Christian nations to bless all the families of the nations of the earth. The Protestant nations of Western Europe have a great Christian heritage. Despite violent opposition, Protestants emerged from the fires of persecution to change lives, make history and transform nations. Faithful believers contended for the Faith, preserved and translated God’s Word, Reformed the Church and vigorously proclaimed the Word of God to all nations.

A Heritage of Faith and Freedom

Christian civilisation achieved the highest levels of productivity, innovation, scientific discoveries, medical advances, missionary outreaches, works of mercy, successfully campaigned to end the slave trade and set the captives free, and laying foundations for justice through the rule of law. The legacy of Faith and freedom through Christian Europe is unparalleled in the history of the world.

“All the ends of the world shall remember and turn to the Lord and all the families of the nations shall worship before You. For the Kingdom is the Lord’s and He rules over the nations. All ...shall bow before Him... a posterity shall serve Him. It will be recounted of the Lord to the next generation. They will come and declare His righteousness, to people who will yet be born, that He has done this.” Psalm 22:27-31

The Greatest Century of Missions

The 19th century was the greatest century of Missionary advance. It was a century of astounding inventions and of spectacular advances in technology. Many countries experienced dramatic spiritual Revivals. Christian missionaries won whole tribes and nations to Christ, in the remotest regions of the globe.

To the Ends of the Earth

Christianity came to the beginning of the 20th century on a rising and apparently unstoppable tide. Christianity was gaining spectacular momentum as missionaries from Europe were Evangelising and discipling virtually every tribe and nation. The Protestant Faith had far outstripped the Catholic and Orthodox branches in missionary activity, vitality and initiative. The Protestant Faith had become the dominant Faith of the most productive, powerful and prosperous nations in both the Northern and Southern hemispheres. Amidst irrepressible optimism, many were openly speaking of the beginning of the Biblical Millennium on earth.

Retreat from Victory

At the first World Missions Conference in Edinburgh in 1910, delegates were anticipating the completion of the Great Commission within their generation. No one in 1910 would have anticipated the wholesale abandonment of entire nations to communism, false religions and heathenism. Nor would anyone have predicted that the church would retreat from victory to such an extent that they would be questioning the existence of the devil, or hell, or redefining marriage to include what God, in the Bible, describes as perversion and an abomination.

World War

The Christian era of bold missionary expansion came to an abrupt halt as the guns of August 1914 erupted. The great European countries, which have been the heartland of Christendom, and the source of most of the world’s missionaries devastated each other’s economies and annihilated millions of one another’s young men, in what has to be recognised as the most tragic and senseless conflict in history.

Sinister Manipulation

The sinister bankers who pulled the strings behind the scenes and engineered the auto genocide of Europe, were also the ones who owned many of the companies that made the machine guns, bullets, bombs, shells and artillery, that destroyed the cream of Europe. There are numerous studies that have shown the role of Freemason bankers and politicians such as Lord Nathan Rothschild, whose goal was to bring down Christian civilisation. Nothing could have stopped the positive onward march of Christianity worldwide, except that Christians were persuaded to kill one another so enthusiastically, and so efficiently, in the First World War.

Secularisation and Revolution

Even more devastating than the actual numbers of people killed, crippled, or severely injured, was the damage to the spiritual life of Europe. The secularisation of Europe and the breakdown of moral standards, coincided with a great resurgence of Revolutionary fervour and Marxist Communism, which filled the vacuum left by the collapse of the Russian, German and Austrian Empires.

The Worst Century of Persecution

As the 19th century was the greatest century of Missionary advance, the 20th century proved to be the worst century of persecution in history. More Christians were martyred for their Faith in the 20th century than in all the previous 19 centuries combined. Looking back over the last 100 years, one can discern how secular humanists have systematically hijacked Christian civilisation.

Infiltration and Subversion

Marxists have targeted 5 major culture-shaping institutions for infiltration: educational institutions; the entertainment industry; the news media; religious institutions; and political institutions.

The Battle for the Mind

Marxist revolutionaries, secular humanists, atheists and evolutionists have so thoroughly infiltrated most of the universities of Europe and North America, that today God is not only banished from the curriculum, but Christianity and its contributions to civilisation are marginalised, ignored, or vilified. Even scientists advocating Intelligent Design are mercilessly hounded from institutions of higher learning. Instead of education, teaching people **how** to think critically, we now mostly have indoctrination, telling students **what** to think.

Rearranging Reality

Anti-Christian secular humanists have dominated the entertainment industry over the last century, subverting families and undermining morality at every turn. Particularly insidious has been the spate of “*This is a true story*”, or “*Based on a true story*”, or “*Inspired by true events*” rewriting of history and distorting of reality.

The First Battlefield

As Karl Marx declared: “*The first battlefield is the rewriting of history*”. Marx’s disciples have been very busy, through both the educational institutions and in the entertainment industry, in re-writing history.

Corrupt and Conquer

The news media has also come to be overwhelming dominated by secular humanist prejudice against Christianity. The secular humanist mass media has been consistently ignoring the relentless anti-Christian persecution by communist and Muslim governments. Through selective focus and distortion of reality, the mass media has effectively brainwashed generations of Christians to vote for those who hate Christian values, and to idolise those who are the intractable enemies of the Faith.

Confuse, Divide and Conquer

Most of the mainline denominations have been infiltrated by secular humanists, called liberal theologians, who have gutted the churches of the Biblical Gospel and produced generations of spineless evangelists. Many churches are filled with pseudo-saved, semi-saved, half-saved, un-saved pew warmers who have never been truly converted, nor have they come into any real relationship with our Lord Jesus Christ.

National Suicide

As a result of the successful infiltration by secular humanists of education institutions, the entertainment industry, the news media and religious institutions, control over political institutions has been inevitable. Those who argue for the good of their nation are shouted down and vilified as dangers to society. Most nations now seemed, to be governed by political parties determined to commit national suicide and sell out their nations’ sovereignty to internationalists.

The United Nations

The hostility of the United Nations to everything Christian is obvious by their consistent support for nations which persecute the Church and failure to effectively address the targeting of Christian minorities. The disgraceful track record of the United Nations, when they have militarily intervened in nations, reveals their true nature. The United Nations mission to the Congo, the invasion of Katanga and forcing that stable, pro-Western state to re-join the communist chaos of the Congo, the atrocities perpetrated against Christian civilians by UN forces in the Congo, are well documented in *The Fearful Master*.

Treachery in Rwanda

The United Nations complicity in disarming the general population in Rwanda enabled the Rwandan holocaust of April/May 1994. More people were killed by machetes in 6 weeks in Rwanda, than have died from nuclear weapons in all of history. The United Nations forces stood by and failed to save lives. As [*Holocaust in Rwanda*](#), *Shake Hands With the Devil*, and the British film “*Shooting Dogs*” (*Beyond the Gates*) documents, the United Nations actually handed over thousands of Christian refugees who had fled to them for protection into the hands of the Interhambwe mass-murderers who slaughtered them.

Human Trafficking

The United Nations involvement in human trafficking, has also been well documented and is dramatized in the book and film *The Whistleblower* based on policewoman Kathryn Bolkovac’s experiences in Bosnia.

Globalism

The three main pillars of the New World Order that the global elite want to bring about are: A One World Economy, a One World Government and a One World Religion. Their shorthand to describe all this is: **Globalism**.

One World Religion

As the United Nations is working for a one-world government, so the World Council of Churches is working for a one-world religion. The World Council of Churches and its local member bodies, such as the National Council of Churches in America, and the South African Council of Churches in South Africa, promote interfaith conferences and urge us to focus on our “*shared religious traditions*.” This interfaith movement is being promoted by Non-Governmental Organisations, charity foundations, and prominent politicians worldwide.

WCC

The WCC claims to represent 349 churches, denominations and church fellowships, in more than 110 countries and territories around the world, representing over 560 million Christians. WCC members include most of the world's Orthodox churches, Anglicans, Methodists, Lutherans, Presbyterians and some Baptist, United and Independent churches. Most, though not all, WCC members tend to be very liberal theologically and are experiencing dramatic decline in church attendance. Many of the people they claim as members have been converted and left the WCC affiliates to join Evangelical churches.

Qur'an in Church

One high profile event that epitomises this move towards a One World Religion, was when on 26 June 2011, the National Cathedral in Washington DC, and approximately 50 other churches in the US, publically read from the Qur'an during their Sunday worship services. This was under the theme of: *"Faith shared: Uniting in Prayer and Understanding."*

Interfaith Worship

Nor is this promotion of interfaith worship limited to liberal Theologians of the National Council of Churches. Prominent Evangelical leaders Rick Warren, Brian McLaren, Bill Hybels and Robert Schuller signed a letter to the Islamic community, entitled *"Loving God and Neighbour Together"*. This letter claimed that Christians consider Allah and the Christian God to be the same! Brian McLaren, a key leader in the Emerging church movement actually celebrated Ramadan in his congregation.

Treason From Within

The Roman leader Cicero, in 42BC, wrote: *"A nation can survive its fools, and even the ambitious. But it cannot survive treason from within. An enemy at the gates is less formidable, for he is known and he carries his banners openly. But the traitor moves among those within the gate freely, his sly whispers rustling through all the alleys, heard in the very halls of government itself. For the traitor appears not traitor, he speaks in the accents familiar to his victims and he wears their face and their garments, and he appeals to the baseness that lies deep in the hearts of all men. He rots the soul of a nation, he works secretly and unknown in the night, to undermine the pillars of a city, he infects the body politic so that it can no longer resist. A murderer is less to be feared."*

Brave New World

In 1932, Aldous Huxley published *The Brave New World*. This book describes as future state of human slavery where people live carefree lives in a technologically advanced society, subdued by drugs and bombarded with endless stimulations and distractions. The 20th century idols of atheism, humanism and communism have now become mainstream.

Towards a New World Order

The first attempt to establish a New World Order was by the people who came to the land of Shinar (present day Iraq) and built the Tower of Babel (Genesis 11). Others have tried since: Nebuchadnezzar with his Babylonian Empire, Alexander the Great with his Greek/Macedonian Empire, The Roman Empire, Genghis Khan and the Mongols, Napoleon, Lenin, Stalin and the Communist International. George Bush senior and Soviet President, Mikhail Gorbachev, repeatedly spoke of a New World Order in the early 90s. US President, Bill Clinton, regularly spoke of the New World Order as being of the highest priority on the International Agenda.

The Right Crisis

In a statement to the United Nations Business Council in September 1994, David Rockefeller said: *"We are on the verge of a global transformation. All we need is the right major crisis and the nations will accept the New World Order."*

Extortion

Henry Ford declared: *"It is well the people of the nation do not understand our banking and monetary system, for if they did, I believe there would be a revolution before tomorrow morning."*

Tragedy and Hope

Carroll Quigley wrote in his massive book *Tragedy and Hope* (published by McMillan in 1966) *"Their aim is nothing less than to create a world system of financial control in private hands able to dominate the political system of each country and the economy of the world as a whole. The system was to be controlled in a feudalistic fashion by the central banks of the world, acting in concert, by a secret agreement arrived at in frequent private meetings and conferences."*

The Manipulators

Major players in working to bring about this New World Order include the Trilateral Commission, the Council of Foreign Relations and the Bilderbergers. These groups work behind the scenes, but their more prominent tools are the United Nations and the World Council of Churches.

Removing Obstacles to the New World Order

The New World Order worked hard at destroying those states that attempted to uphold Christian values. Hence the extraordinary international campaigns against Rhodesia and South Africa in the 60s, 70s and 80s.

Destroying the Middle Class

The destruction of much of the middle class through financial crises such as that triggered by banks selling worthless derivatives which caused the 2008 economic collapse, cost tens-of-millions of people their jobs, their savings and their homes.

How Can We Resist the New World Order?

First, we need to **know our enemy**.

“My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge...” Hosea 4:6

We need to **recognise their tactics**.

“Another generation grew up, who knew neither the Lord, nor what He had done...” Judges 2:10

Wide Gates to Hell

German Reformer, Dr. Martin Luther, warned: *“I am much afraid that schools will prove to be wide gates to hell, unless they diligently labour in explaining the Holy Scriptures, engraving them in the hearts of youth. I advise no one to place his child where the Scriptures do not reign paramount. Every institution in which men are not constantly occupied with the Word of God must become corrupt.”*

The Philosophy of Education will become Government Policy in the Next Generation

You cannot trust any government state with the moulding of the minds of future voters. God commanded His people: *“Learn not the way of the heathen.”* Jeremiah 10:2. The **control** of education should be in the hands of parents and the **content** of education must be Bible-based. Children do not belong to the state. Children are made in the image of God and are entrusted to parents to: *“Bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.”* Ephesians 6:4

Christian Education

All parents must become involved in the Parents Teacher Associations of their local school and take an active role in their education of their young, according to Biblical principles. Bible-based Christian schools should be supported. Home schooling should be prayerfully considered by those parents who have the means to do so. *“The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom.”* Psalm 111:10

The Battle for the Family

Christians should have large families and ensure that they are brought up in the love and the fear of the Lord. Teaching is an integral part of the Great Commission and therefore an indispensable part of our Mission. Christian parents and church leaders must give high priority to the establishment and supporting of Christian schools and home schooling. *“We will not hide them from their children; we will tell the next generation the praiseworthy deeds of the Lord... He commanded our forefathers to teach their children... and they in turn would tell their children. Then they would put their trust in God.”* Psalm 78:4-7

The Great Commission

We must never allow any distractions to deter us from obeying Christ's Great Commission. Our purpose on earth is to: *“Make disciples... teaching obedience”* Matthew 28:19-20. The lifeblood of the Church is its Evangelistic zeal. No matter what the situation, or how adverse the circumstances may seem to be, our Lord commands us to: *“Preach the Word; be prepared in season and out of season; correct, rebuke and encourage – with great patience and careful instruction.”* 2 Timothy 4:2

Vision

“Where there is no vision a people perish...” Proverbs 29:18. Our people need a positive and practical vision from the Word of God for our personal lives, for our churches, for our nations and for the world.

Symptoms

We need to squarely face the great moral challenges of our day, including the symptoms of our moral sickness: deception in the news media, degenerate entertainment, dishonesty in business, decadence in government...

Recognise the Root Causes

What is even more important is that we recognise the root causes: ineffective churches, insipid preaching, irresponsible leaders, a rejection of God's Law as the foundation for our families, churches and nation, neglect of the Bible, prayerlessness, selfishness, confusion, compromise, cowardice and, at the very core, a lack of wholehearted love for God.

Issue Evasion

If our churches are motivated primarily by growth in members, finance, buildings and community prestige then issue evasion, a policy of non-confrontation and compromise is inevitable. Building our own empire does not allow for serving the Kingdom of God.

What Do You Stand For?

In the demands for greater and more spectacular events, churches have concentrated on **how** to get converts - not on **what** they are supposed to be converted for.

This is because escapism sells better than **service**.

Forgiveness attracts more members than **teaching obedience**.

Blessings are far more popular than **sacrifice**.

Many churches primarily stand for escape and entertainment, offering forgiveness to those who neither want to **obey**, nor **serve**.

Churches which are obsessed with growth cannot afford to upset the peace and affluence of their members, or prospective members.

Choose This Day

For many it is a choice between:

Popularity or **Principle**,

Prestige or **Persecution**,

Prosperity or **Powerful Christianity**,

Sensationalism or **Spirituality**,

Success or **Sacrifice**,

Serving man or **Serving God**,

Church growth or **Church depth**,

Respectability before man or **Revival from God**.

Compromise

The result is that all too many churches are entertaining their members, rather than **educating** them with **expository preaching from God's Word**. They are comforting their members instead of **challenging them in confronting sin**. Many prefer revelry to preaching **Repentance**.

"Righteousness and justice are the foundation of Your Throne; love and faithfulness go before You." Psalm 89:14

Priorities

We must give our highest priority to loving, worshiping, serving, obeying and honouring God. We need a Biblical vision of righteousness, justice, love and compassion. *"The Lord loves righteousness and justice..."* Psalm 33:5

"Hate evil, love good; maintain justice in the courts." Amos 5:15

"Clothe yourselves with compassion." Colossians 3:12

"Whatever you did for one of the least of these brothers of Mine, you did it for Me." Matthew 25:40

A Positive Programme

We need to promote a **renewed** vision, **revitalised** leadership, a **restored** nation, through **returning** to God in **Repentance**, **rediscovering** the Biblical Agenda, **rebuilding** the walls of our society, **resisting** the demands for cultural suicide, resolutely working for **Reformation** and praying for **Revival**.

Support Christian Media

We must support Christian alternatives to the secular humanist dominated media: Subscribe to **JOY!** and **JUIG!** Magazines and **Christian Action**. Become a local distributor for these magazines in your church.

"And we urge you, brothers, warn those who are idle, encourage the timid, help the weak, be patient with everyone." 1 Thessalonians 5:15

Be Informed

Get on the mailing lists and e-mailing lists of Missions and ministries working for Reformation and Revival. Support [KwaSizabantu Mission](#), [Frontline Fellowship](#), [Way of the Master](#), [The Reformation Society](#), [Christian Action](#) and [Evangelism Explosion](#).

Renew Minds and Change Communities

Attend, or organise, a local Biblical Worldview Seminar to teach your people how to be effective in winning the cultural war, the battle for the family, and the battle for the mind. Praise God for ministries such as, [Answers in Genesis](#) and the [Creation Museum](#), which are providing Biblical and scientific answers for a skeptical and increasingly secular world. *“Love your neighbour as yourself... go and do likewise.”* Luke 10:27-37

Resources for Reformation

Visit the www.christianlibertybooks.co.za website and obtain more powerful, effective, Biblically faithful books, DVDs and audio-visual materials for you and your family. Set up a book table at your local church to make these resources more widely available to those in your community. *“But thanks be to God! He gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my dear brothers, stand firm. Let nothing move you. Always give yourselves fully to the work of the Lord, because you know that your labour in the Lord is not in vain.”* 1 Corinthians 15:57-58

Social Media

Get on the e-mailing lists of Christian Action and Frontline Fellowship. Use social media to expose and oppose the New World Order and work to fulfil the Great Commission. Both [Frontline Fellowship](#) and [Africa Christian Action](#) have Facebook pages, [Slideshare](#), [Vimeo](#) clips and websites with great resources that you can access, link to, like and share with those on your social media network. [Reformation500](#) is particularly focussed on exposing and opposing the New World Order.

“In the time of those kings, the God of Heaven will set up a Kingdom that will never be destroyed, nor will it be left to another people. It will crush all those kingdoms and bring them to an end. But will itself endure forever.” Daniel 2:44

Dr. Peter Hammond

Reformation Society

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725

Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021-689-4480

Fax: 086-494-8070

Email: mission@frontline.org.za

www.ReformationSA.org

www.hmsschoolofchristianjournalism.org

Chapter 8

RESISTING THE NEW WORLD ORDER

“Should you help the wicked and love those who hate the Lord? Therefore the wrath of the Lord is upon you.”

2 Chronicles 19:2

New World Order

The first attempt to establish a New World Order was by the people who came to the land of Shinar (present day Iraq) and built the Tower of Babel (Genesis 11:2-4). Others have tried since. Revelation 13 describes a beast with many heads and horns. The dragon gave the beast power, a throne and great authority. The beast mouthed blasphemies against God, blaspheming His Name, His Tabernacle, and those who dwell in Heaven. The beast made war with the saints and gained authority over *“every tribe, tongue and nation.”*

“All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.” Revelation 13:8

Global Deception

The beast will capture and kill the people of God. There will also be another beast, with a religious function who will also have worldwide authority and *“causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast... he deceived those who dwell on the earth...”* Revelation 13:11-14. The Scripture makes clear that this devilish power will work to bring about a One World government, a One World religion, and a One World economic system. Those who refuse to follow this One World religion will be persecuted and killed (Revelation 13:15).

“He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand, or on their foreheads, and that no one may buy or sell, except one who the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.” Revelation 13:16-17

Throughout the years there have been many interpretations and applications of these verses. The important thing is for us to see the big picture. The Word of God is warning us of a devilish system that will seek to impose a One World government, a One World religion, and a One World economic system. It will be further identified by its blasphemies and hostility towards God and His Name. As well as by its hostility towards believers of the past, those who are in Heaven now.

Marks of the Beast

We can certainly see that the world is dominated today by many forces working towards a One World government, a One World interfaith religious system and a unified economic system. Hollywood is spewing out a vast amount of blasphemies in a great variety of films. There is also an abundance of films which seek to rearrange reality and rewrite history, by slandering great Christians of the past.

Sinister Forces

The United Nations is the most visible attempt to create a One World government. Behind it one can discern the manipulations of the Council on Foreign Relations, the Freemasons, the Bilderbergers, the Rothschilds, and the Illuminati. Working parallel to the United Nations one can see the World Council of Churches working for a One World religion. The interfaith movement is being promoted aggressively by non-governmental organisations, charity foundations, prominent politicians worldwide and by the WCC.

“Do not be deceived: evil company corrupts good character.” 1 Corinthians 15:33

Roman Edict

Throughout history there have been others who have attempted to impose their political and religious rule on the world. Caesar Nero of Rome commanded everyone in the empire to worship him. They were to place the ashes of the incense they had burned before his image on their forehead before they were allowed to trade in the market places.

Muhammad’s Rule

Muhammad, the founder of Islam attempted to impose his religious and political system on all. Men were not permitted to trade in the market place until they had bowed to Mecca. Many would leave some dust on their forehead to indicate that they had performed their Muslim duty. The Hadith records an incident where Muhammad challenged an old man whether he had bowed in prayer that day. The man bent down picked up some dust and rubbed it on his forehead, by way of a joke, mimicking the practise of so many others in Arabia at that time. Yet the Hadith records that Muhammad did not appreciate his sense of humour and ordered this man to be executed.

Revolution

During the French Revolution there was an attempt to impose a blasphemous secular humanist religion on all. The Soviet Union also attempted to eradicate all expressions of Christianity. Over 48,000 churches were confiscated, demolished, or destroyed, under the dictatorship of Lenin and Stalin. Tens-of-millions of Christians were slaughtered in the territories controlled by the Soviet Union to consolidate political control and enforce religious conformity to the will of the state.

Satanic Strategy

All of these are examples of how satan works. From Babel to Babylon, from Rome to the French Revolution and from the Soviet Union to Red China, those who seek to impose a One World government and a One World religion, also seek to control the economy and they pour out blasphemies against God and His people, persecuting those who refuse to bow to their political and religious will. They make war on the saints and attempt to stamp their mark on all that they have power over.

The Mark

Many people have focussed on how the mark would be placed on the right hand, or on the forehead, perhaps by a tattoo, or more recently, as the technology has become available, by a microchip. These methods may be possible, but the emphasis in the Scripture is on our way of thinking and our actions. We are commanded in the Word of God to bind His Law on our hands and on our foreheads. This surely is speaking about having our way of thinking governed by the Word of God and having our actions governed by the Word of God (Deut. 6:5-8). Many people have the mark of the beast on them, without any tattoo or microchip. When one allows one's way of thinking to be conformed to the world and one's actions to be in conformity to what satan wants, then we have the mark.

“You shall not follow a crowd to do evil.” Exodus 23:2

Confronting Compromise and Cowardice

When the communists took over Romania they bullied and intimidated the church leaders to line up and come onto the platform to endorse communism. One after the other, ministers stood up to proclaim that communism was actually *Christianity in practise* and all Christians should support the Communist Party of Romania.

A young Lutheran minister, Richard Wurmbbrand, walked up to the podium and quoted this passage of Scripture from 2 Corinthians 6:14: ***“Do not be unequally yoked together with unbelievers. For what fellowship has righteousness with lawlessness? And what communion has light with darkness?...”***

Resistance

To resist the New World Order we need to fear God, refuse to be conformed to the world, and have our minds renewed daily by the Word of God. We need to devote our lives to obeying the Cultural Mandate and the Great Commission. As the Apostle Peter declared: ***“We must obey God rather than men!”*** (Acts 5:29).

“The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom.” Psalm 111:10

Daniel's Vision

Daniel had a vision of all the kingdoms of the world: the head of gold, the chest of silver, the stomach of bronze, the legs of iron, and the feet of iron and clay. ***“And in the days of these kings the God of Heaven will set up a Kingdom which shall never be destroyed; and the Kingdom shall not be left to another people; it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms and shall stand forever.”*** Daniel 2:44

Daniel described a stone that smashed into pieces the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver and the gold and how that stone would grow to become a mountain that would fill the whole earth. The Kingdom of God will destroy and replace all these human attempts to create a New World Order. Those who promote a One World religion and a One World government are doomed to defeat and disgrace. Those who faithfully serve the King of kings and the Lord of lords will be vindicated.

“But thanks be to God! He gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my dear brothers, stand firm. Let nothing move you. Always give yourselves fully to the work of the Lord, because you know that your labour in the Lord is not in vain.” 1 Corinthians 15:57-58

Dr. Peter Hammond is a missionary, author and conference speaker. Tel: 021-689-4480; mission@frontline.org.za; www.frontline.org.za

Chapter 9

THE HEART AND SOUL OF KARL MARX

In his Manifesto of 1848, Karl Marx wrote: *“The theory of the communists may be summed up in a single sentence: Abolition of private property.”* *“You reproach us with intending to do away with your property. Precisely so: that is just what we intend.”*

Have We Adopted Marxist Ideas?

To this end, he advocated:

1. Abolition of property rights and application of all rents to the state.
2. A heavy progressive graduated income tax.
3. Abolition of all rights of inheritance by taxing inheritance.
4. Confiscation of the property of emigrants and all rebels to the state.
5. Centralisation of credit in banks of the state, by means of a national bank with an exclusive monopoly on money supply.
6. Centralisation of the means of communication and transport in the hands of the state.
7. Factories and instruments of production to be owned by the state; wilderness areas to be nationalised by the state.
8. Equal obligation of all to be put to work by the state.
9. Establishment of industrial armies, especially for agriculture.
10. Combination of agriculture with manufacturing industries; gradual abolition of all the distinction between town and country, by more equitable distribution of the populous over the country.
11. Free and compulsory education for all children in state schools.

Abolition of Religion

Karl Marx wrote: *“The abolition of religion as the illusory happiness of man is a requisite for their real happiness.”*
In the Communist Manifesto, Karl Marx wrote, *“Communism abolishes eternal truths, it abolishes all religion and all morality.”*

Marx wrote: *“I wish to avenge myself against the One who rules above.”*

“I shall build my throne high overhead,

Cold, tremendous shall its summit be.

For its bulwark – superstitious dread.

For its marshal - blackest agony.”

Karl Marx wrote to his father: *“New gods have to be installed.”*

Darkness

In his drama *Oulanem*, he wrote:

“The hellish vapours rise and fill the brain,

Till I go mad and my heart is utterly changed.

See this sword? The prince of darkness sold it to me.

For me beats the time

And gives the signs

Evermore boldly I play the dance of death.”

Destruction

Marx loved to quote the words of Faust: *“Everything in existence is worth being destroyed.”*

“If there is a something which devours,

I’ll leap within it, though I bring the world to ruins

– The world which bulks between me and the abyss,

I will smash to pieces with my enduring curses.”

“Without violence, nothing is ever accomplished in history.”

Chosen for Hell

“Thus Heaven I’ve forfeited, I know it full well. My soul, once true to God, is chosen for hell.”

To Bring This World to Ruins

In his poem, *Human Pride*, Marx, wrote:

*“With disdain I will throw my gauntlet full in the face of the world,
And see the collapse of this pygmy giant whose fall will not stifle my ardour.
Then will I wander god-like and victorious through the ruins of the world.
And, giving my words an active force, I will feel equal to the Creator.”*

Demon Possessed

Karl Marx’s good friend, Frederick Engels wrote: *“Karl Marx is a monster possessed by ten thousand devils.”*

Devilish

Robert Payne, a friend of Karl Marx, wrote: that Karl Marx *“had the devil’s view of the world and the devil’s malignity. Sometimes he seemed to know that he was accomplishing the works of evil.”*

God is Our Enemy

Karl Marx wrote that he wanted to: *“Hurl gigantic curses on mankind.”* Marx quoted positively from Paris Communard, Flourens, who declared: *“Our enemy is God. Hatred of God is the beginning of wisdom.”*

The Family of Karl Marx

Karl Marx’s family life was a disaster. He had seven children by his wife, Jenny, and another by his housemaid Helen Demuth. One of his daughters, Eleanor, married Edward Aveling, a Satanist known for his blasphemous lectures on *“The wickedness of God”*, and for his poem to satan. Three of Karl Marx’s children starved to death. Five of his children died prematurely. Two of his daughters committed suicide, as did his wife. Karl Marx wrote that he did not love anyone and that he was entirely comfortable with hatred.

Racist

He referred to the Slavic people, like Russians, as *“ethnic trash”* and prophesied that: *“their very name will vanish.”* He dismissed Mexicans as *“lazy”*, and Negroes as *“frozen at pre-historic levels”* who would never contribute anything worthwhile to society.

War Against the Family

In the *Manifesto*, Karl Marx wrote: *“We destroy the most hallowed oblations, when we replace home education with social.”*

Atheism and Hatred

Marx’s dedicated disciple, Vladimir Lenin, declared: *“Atheism is the natural and inseparable part of Communism. We must hate. Hatred is the basis of Communism”.*

War Against God

Under Vladimir Lenin, one of the slogans of the Soviet Union was: *“WE FIGHT AGAINST GOD to snatch believers from Him.”* A prominent slogan of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union was: *“Let us drive out the Capitalists from the earth, and God from Heaven.”*

Hatred of God

Alexander Solzhenitsyn declared: *“The world has never before known a godlessness as organised, militarised and tenaciously malevolent as that preached by Marxism. Within the philosophical system of Marx and Lenin, and at the heart of their psychology, Hatred of God is the principle driving force, more fundamental than all their political and economic pretensions. Militant atheism is not merely incidental, or marginal, to Communist policy; it is not a side effect, but the central pivot. To achieve its diabolical ends, Communism needs to control a population devoid of religious and national feeling, and this entails a destruction of faith and nationhood. Communists proclaim both of these objectives openly, and just as openly put them into practice.”*

“They promise them freedom while they themselves are slaves of depravity.” 2 Peter 2:19

Chapter 10

HOW MARXISTS SUBVERT CHURCHES AND SOCIETY

The First Battlefield

As Karl Marx declared: *“The first battlefield is the rewriting of history.”*

Hypnotised by Deception

“Modern society is hypnotised by socialism. It is prevented by socialism from seeing the mortal danger it is in. One of the greatest dangers of all is that you have lost all sense of danger. You cannot even see where it is coming from as it moves swiftly towards you. Socialism of any type leads to a total destruction of the human spirit... to destroy a people, you must first sever their roots.” - Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn

PsyOps

Marxists aim to demoralise their targeted victims through psychological warfare (psyops). Using guilt manipulation, vilifying the victims and victimising the villains, their politics of guilt and pity seek to undermine Christianity and nationalism.

Unable to Even Distinguish Good from Evil

“The generation now coming out of Western schools is unable to distinguish good from bad. Even those words are unacceptable. This results in impaired thinking ability.” - Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn

Playing the Victim Card While Demonising Opponents

Marxists employ double standards to enable them to always play the victim while demonising the opponents of Marxism. Along with demonising opponents, Marxists seek to promote hero worship of their idols of the New World Order.

Ripping Up the Foundations of Justice

“In keeping silent about evil, in burying it so deep within us that no sign of it appears on the surface, we are implanting it and it will rise up a thousand fold in the future. When we neither punish, nor reproach, evildoers... we are ripping the foundations of justice from beneath new generations. In our country, the lie is not just a moral category, but also a pillar of the state. The timid civilised world has found nothing with which to oppose the sudden revival of bare-faced barbarity, other than concessions and smiles.” - Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn

Intimidation

Through politically correct censorship and intimidation, cyber bullying and cry bullying, they seek to mobilise hysterical, spiteful, vindictive opposition to silence all dissent. Anyone daring to express a different opinion will find themselves a target of malicious slurs and smear tactics.

“The words of his mouth were smoother than butter, but war was in his heart; his words were softer than oil, yet they were drawn swords.” Psalm 55:21

Poisoning the Well and Weaponising Words

They seek to weaponise words and poison the well, calling free speech: *“Hate speech!”* Marxists seek to silence opposition by accusing anyone who dares to introduce facts and reason into the discussion: *Racist! Anti-Semite! Nazi! Islamaphobe! Homophobic bigot!* and other toxic labels designed to intimidate opponents into silence and retreat.

A Loss of Civic Courage

“A decline in courage may be the most striking feature that an outside observer notices in the West today. The West has lost its civic courage... Such a decline in courage is particularly noticeable amongst the ruling and intellectual elite, causing an impression of a loss of courage by the entire society.” - Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn

The Gramsci Strategy

The Frankfurt School of Cultural Marxism utilised the Gramsci Strategy, otherwise known as the Termite Strategy of eating the heart out of every pillar of Western civilisation until the entire edifice rots and collapses. Their goal is the secularisation of society - to sideline Christianity and deal with all issues without reference to the Bible.

“... ‘Should you help the wicked and love those who hate the Lord?’ Therefore the wrath of the Lord is upon you.” 2 Chronicles 19:2

Marxists identify Primary Culture Transforming Institutions for Infiltration and Subversion:

1. Education
2. Entertainment
3. News Media,
4. Religious institutions
5. Political institutions

Marxist Revolutionaries identify their Stages of Operation for Ideological Subversion:

1. Demoralisation
2. Destabilisation
3. Crisis
4. Normalisation
5. Second Phase of the Revolution

Subversion and Slander

Everything is designed to undermine the strength of the targeted enemy through subversion and slander. Straw man arguments are frequently used to weaken the resistance of targeted individuals, or groups.

Smokescreens and Distractions

Distraction is essential to provide a smoke screen behind which Marxist subversives can destroy everything that could be a strength in the congregation, community or country targeted. The issue focused on is seldom the real concern. Their motivation is normally the furthering of the revolution by discrediting all resistance.

Character Assassination

As Socrates famously declared: *“When the debate is lost, slander becomes the tool of the loser.”* Those who resort to *ad hominem* arguments reveal that they are unable to deal with the issue at hand without resorting to name-calling and character assassination against their opponent.

Resist the Lie

“The simple truth of a courageous individual is not to take part in the lie. One word of truth outweighs the world. You can resolve to live your life with integrity. Let your Credo be this: let the lie come into the world, let it even triumph. But not through me.” - Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn

“Confuse, Divide and Conquer”

If a people can be confused then they can be divided, which makes it easier to defeat them. Hence, Marxists aim at: **Disinformation, Division and Defeat** for the country targeted.

“While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption...” 2 Peter 2:19

“Corrupt and Conquer”

Degenerate entertainment, defiled art and decadent culture are part of the strategy of cultural Marxists to rot the soul of a nation.

Treason from Within

As Marcus Cicero warned: *“A nation can survive its fools and even the ambitious, but it cannot survive treason from within. An enemy at the gates is less formidable, for he is known and carries his banners openly, but the traitor moves amongst those within the gates freely, his sly whispers, rustling through all the alleys, heard in the very halls of government itself. For the traitor appears not a traitor; he speaks in accents familiar to his victims, he wears their face and their arguments, he appeals to the baseness that lies deep in the hearts of all men, he rots the soul of a nation, he works secretly and unknown in the night, to undermine the pillars of the city, he infects the body politic, so that it can no longer resist. A murderer is less to be feared.”*

Vulgar Fads Rot the Soul of a Nation

“European democracy was originally endued with a sense of Christian responsibility and self-discipline, but these spiritual principles have been gradually losing their force. Spiritual independence is being pressured on all sides by the dictatorship of self-satisfied vulgarity, of the latest fads and of group interests.” - Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn

The Soul of a Nation

“The strength or weakness of a society depends more on the level of its spiritual life than on its level of industrialisation. Neither a market economy nor even general abundance constitutes the crowning achievement of human life. If a nation’s spiritual energies have been exhausted, it will not be saved from collapse by the most perfect government structure or by any industrial development. A tree with a rotten core cannot stand.” – Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn

“Who will rise up for Me against the evildoers? Who will stand up for Me against the workers of iniquity?”
Psalm 94:16

Dr. Peter Hammond

Gospel Defence League

P.O. Box 36129 Glosderry 7702

Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021-689-4480

Email: mission@frontline.org.za www.gospeldefenceleague.org

www.frontlinemissionsa.org www.ReformationSA.org

Chapter 11

THE TURKISH GENOCIDE OF ARMENIAN, ASSYRIAN AND GREEK CHRISTIANS

April marks the anniversary of the launch of the systematic extermination of the Christian Armenians by the Ottoman Turks. The *Jihad* began with the arrest of 250 Christian leaders in Constantinople (what is today called Istanbul) and over 800 other Christian leaders throughout the empire, on 24 April 1915. Over 1.5 million Christians were slaughtered by Muslims in Turkey during 1915. Additionally, 750,000 Assyrian Christians and 950,000 Greek Orthodox Christians were murdered in the Ottoman Turkish Empire between 1915 and 1922. That amounts to over 3.5 million Christian victims of the Turkish Empire over just 7 years.

Corruption and Cruelty

The Ottoman Empire declined into corruption and degeneracy from the beginning. When Sultan Murad III died in AD 1595, his son Muhammad had his 19 brothers murdered to prevent them from claiming “*his throne*”. He also had seven of his father’s pregnant concubines sown into sacks and thrown into the river. Many of his nephews were incarcerated in “*the cage*”. Sultan Ibrahim threw his grand Vizier into a cistern. One morning, after an orgy, Ibrahim had all 300 women of his harem put into sacks and thrown into the Bosphorus. Only one survived by being picked up by a ship bound for France. When Ibrahim was finally assassinated, the Ottoman Empire was torn apart by more corruption, nepotism, inefficiency, misrule and power struggles.

A New Wave of Muslim Massacres

In the early 19th Century, after the Ottoman Empire suffered defeats at the hands of Russia and Austria and as the Greeks and Serbs mounted successful wars of national liberation, Sultan Mahmut II decided to massacre all the Janissaries (soldiers recruited forcefully from Christian families). The reforms and westernisation of state institutions was accompanied by escalating persecution of Christians. Despite the adopting of a Western style constitution in 1839, to placate the European powers, the last century of Ottoman rule witnessed the most thorough and complete destruction of Christian communities throughout the Middle East, Asia Minor, the Caucasus and the Balkans. In 1822, the entire population of the Island of Chios, tens of thousands of people, were massacred, or enslaved. In 1823, 8,750 Christians were slaughtered by the Turks at Missolonghi. Thousands of Assyrian Christians were murdered in the province of Mossul in 1850. It was such atrocities as these that led the Russians to demand the right to protect the Holy Places which were under Orthodox supervision, in the Middle East.

The New Napoleonic Empire of France

With the accession to power in France of Napoleon III in 1852, he sought to provoke an international crisis by demanding that the Turks place the Holy places in the Middle East under the power of the Roman Catholic church, rather than the Russian Orthodox. As Napoleon III’s new French regime was completely secular, this was a cynical and manipulative diplomatic move designed to provoke war with Russia.

Extending the Life of Ottoman Oppression

So Napoleon III’s France assumed the role of Catholic *crusader*, but in aid of the Islamic crescent, effectively supporting the blood-stained, despotic and corrupt Ottoman Turkish Empire. This move led to soaking the continent in blood. Over 800,000 died in the Crimean War. Far more serious than the actual loss in lives and limbs in that war, was that the British and French actions in the Crimean War extended the worthless existence of the Turkish tyranny, who thereafter targeted the Christians who had previously been under the protection of Czarist Russia, with greater ferocity.

Russia’s Manifest Destiny

Systematically Russia had worked at freeing Christians from Ottoman Turkish control, liberating the Balkans and forcing the Turks to respect the religious freedom of their Christian subjects. As Russia extended Christian civilisation across the whole of North Asia to the Pacific Ocean, they also were pushing southward in their civilising mission, seeking to liberate the holy places in Palestine, which were then controlled by the Muslim Turks.

Propping Up Turkey

If it had not been for the untimely intervention of Great Britain and France, the Russians would have undoubtedly overrun the whole rotten, corrupt and crumbling edifice of the Turkish Empire, and established Orthodox Christianity throughout the Middle East.

The Scandalous Alliance

However, Britain dreaded the establishment of a Russian superpower stretching from the Arctic to the Indian Ocean. So, to prevent Russia gaining ice-free ports for their Navy, Britain became the protector and guarantee of the Ottoman Turkish Empire.

The Greatest Threat

Turkey had been the greatest threat to the freedom of Europe throughout the centuries. The Turks had twice besieged Vienna in the heart of Europe. They had sacked Budapest, taking hundreds of thousands of Christians into Islamic slavery from the very heart of Europe.

After the Crimean War

In 1860 over 12,000 Christians were slaughtered in Lebanon. In 1876, 14,700 Bulgarians were murdered by the Turks. At the town of Batao, out of 7,000 inhabitants, 5,000 Christians were put to the sword. However, reports of these and other routine atrocities by the Ottoman Turks were generally suppressed by British government of Prime Minister Benjamin Disraeli, for political reasons. He saw it as more important to block Christian Russia's Naval ambitions to secure an ice-free port by promoting an alliance of convenience with Muslim Turkey.

Counter Productive Intervention

So, 160 years ago, Western European powers interfered in the policies of Russia, invaded the Crimea, and, as a result, strengthened the hand of radical Islam. Instead of supporting civilisation and advancing freedom, the Western powers intervention in Crimea, in the 1856-1856 Crimean War, actually undermined freedom, retarded civilisation and unintentionally led to even worse massacres of Christians in the extended life granted to the tyrannical Turkish Empire.

The Scandalous Alliance

Gladstone opposed the Turkophile policies of Disraeli in these words: *"He is not such a Turk as I thought. What he hates is Christian liberty and reconstruction."* What Gladstone observed 135 years ago, could easily be applied to the foreign policies of many Western governments today: the Islamophilia in the West is not so much love of the Turk, but hatred of Christianity. As Serge Trifkovic in *"The Sword of the Prophet"* observes: *"The great Western powers - the heirs of those who had looted Constantinople in the Crusades and refused to help when the Turks were breaking through the walls with a cannon built by an Hungarian Catholic, who forced the last Emperors to forswear their Orthodox Faith at the Council of Florence as the price of Western help that never came - those same Western powers and Great Britain in particular, actually supported the Turkish subjugation of Christian Europeans on the grounds that the Muhammadan empire was a stabilising force and a counter-weight against Austria and Russia. The scandalous alliance with Turkey against Russia in the Crimean War reflected a pernicious frame of mind that has manifested itself more recently in the overt, covert, or de facto support of certain Western powers for the Muslim side in Bosnia, Kosova, Macedonia, Chechnya, Cyprus, Sudan, East Timor and Kashmir."*

The Forgotten Holocaust

The Turks slaughtered over 200,000 Armenian Christians in Bayazid (1877), Alashgurd (1879), Sassun (1894), Constantinople (1896), Adana (1909) and in Armenia (1895 - 1896). In 1915 the Turks massacred over 1.5 million Armenian Christians in the most intensive extermination of Christians ever launched up to that point. *"Passage to Ararat"* describes how along the road to Adana, Turkish women were given daggers to stab dying Armenians in order to gain the credit, in the eyes of Allah, of having killed a Christian. In 1881, the Turks slaughtered the Christians in Alexandria. In 1915 - 1916, over a 100,000 Maronite Christians in Lebanon and Syria were murdered.

Anti-Christian Mass Murderers

It is no wonder that the British Prime Minister Gladstone described the Muslim Turks as: *"They were, upon the whole, from the black day when they first entered Europe the one great anti-human specimen of humanity. Wherever they went, a broad line of blood marked the track behind them and, as far as their dominion reached, civilisation disappeared from view. They represented everywhere government by force as opposed to government by law."*

Slaughter in Smyrna

Even as the Ottoman Empire crumbled and was replaced by the new Republic of Turkey under Mustafa Kemal Ataturk the ancient city of Smyrna, with its 300,000 Christian population, was destroyed. The burning of Smyrna and the massacre of its Christian population marked the end of Greek civilisation in Asia Minor. On the eve of its destruction, Smyrna was a bustling port and a vibrant commercial centre. The seafront promenade was a popular tourist destination.

The Martyrdom of Chrysostomos

On 9 September 1922 the Turkish mob, organized and mobilized by the Turkish army under the command of Mustafa Kemal, attacked the Greek Orthodox Metropolitan Chrysostomos. The mob ripped his eyes out and dragged him by the beard, bleeding through the streets, beating and kicking him. Every now and then, when he had the strength to do it, he would raise his right hand and bless his persecutors, repeating: *“Father, forgive them.”* One Turk became so infuriated at this that he cut off the Metropolitan’s hand with his sword. Father Chrysostomos was hacked to pieces by the angry mob. The burning of Smyrna began on 13 September. The inhabitants were trapped between the flames on the one side and the Turkish bayonets on the other. On 13 September 1922, the Turks burned Smyrna, the last Christian city in Asia, to the ground.

The Curse of Western Neutrality

Incredibly, British, American, Italian and French ships anchored in Smyrna’s harbour were ordered to maintain neutrality. Some of the eye witnesses described the scene: *“The pitiful throng - huddled together, sometimes screaming for help, but mostly waiting in a silent panic beyond hope - didn’t budge for days. Typhoid reduced their numbers, but there was no way to dispose of the dead. Occasionally a person would swim from the dock to one of the anchored ships and try to climb the ropes and chains, only to be driven off. On the American battleships, the musicians on board were ordered to play as loudly as they could to drown out the screams of the pleading swimmers. The English poured boiling water down on the unfortunates who reached their vessel. The harbour was so clogged with corpses that the officers of the foreign battleships were often late to their dinner appointments because bodies would get entangled in the propellers of their launches... a cluster of women’s heads bound together like coconuts by their long hair floated down a river toward the harbour...”*

An Unmitigated Cultural Disaster

That was the end of Christianity in Turkey. As Trifkovic observes: *“At the very time that Europe achieved its military and geopolitical advantage, the moral and religious decline that culminated in the auto-genocides of 1914 and 1939 had become evident. Having found in their grasp places their Crusader predecessors had only dreamed of reclaiming: Jerusalem, Bethlehem, Antioch, Alexandria, Constantinople - effete and demoralised European governments made no effort to re-Christianise them and, within a few decades neatly abandoned them. The moral disarmament of contemporary post-Christian Europe is now nearly universal. After World War I, with the installation of nominally pro-Western governments in many Muslim countries fashioned from the wreckage of the Ottoman Empire, the West seemed to have convinced itself of the existence of benign Islam.”*

Genocide

Entire Christian communities were obliterated in the Middle East. The Nestorians, the Chaldeans and other Christian communities were virtually wiped out.

Anti-Christian Riots in Istanbul

As late as 6 September 1955, Istanbul’s Christians suffered what one reporter called *“the worst race riot in Europe”* which, in seven hours destroyed and looted over 4,000 homes, 1,000 businesses, 73 churches, 3 monasteries, 23 schools, 110 hotels and 27 pharmacies, causing over £100 million damage to properties belonging to Christians.

The Most Fatal Enemies of Civilization

It is no wonder that William Muir, (1819 - 1905), one of the greatest Orientalist of all times, concluded at the end of a long and distinguished career: *“the sword of Muhammad and the Quran are the most fatal enemies of civilisation, liberty and truth which the world has yet known... an unmitigated cultural disaster parading as God’s will...”*

Intellectual Dishonesty

The persecution of Christians by Muslims and the genocide by Turkey, have become forbidden subjects in Western circles. Fourteen centuries of religious discrimination and persecution, causing the suffering, oppression, enslavement and murder of over 270 million people have been buried under a thick whitewash of myths of Islamic *“tolerance.”* The deceit, cowardice and silence by all too many western journalists and academics continues to facilitate religious discrimination and persecution by radical Islam to this day.

Hypocrisy

The intellectual dishonesty of those westerners who engage in academic gymnastics to justify the invasion of other peoples lands, the looting, pillaging, raping, murdering and enslaving of whole peoples, needs to be exposed. The hypocrisy of those who justify the military expansion of Muslims, but condemn those who inflicted defeats upon these Islamic invaders, needs to be challenged. The fiction that Jihad has never been an aggressive, but only a

defensive concept, should be dismissed with the contempt that such deception deserves.... When Islam defines a refusal to submit to Sharia law under Islam as aggression and when they define peace as submission to Islam, then we must know that we are not talking the same language.

Jihad Seeks to Conquer our Souls

As one person described it, Jihad: *“seeks to conquer our souls. That seeks the disappearance of our freedoms and civilisation. That seeks to annihilate our way of living and dying, our way of praying or not praying, our way of eating and drinking and dressing and entertaining and informing ourselves. We don’t understand or don’t want to understand that if we don’t oppose them, if we don’t defend ourselves, if we don’t fight, the Jihad will win. And it will destroy the world that for better or worse we’ve managed to build... it will destroy our culture, our art, our science, our morals, our values, our pleasures.”*

“Then you will know the truth and the truth will set you free.” John 8:32

Remember the Persecuted

It is vital that we learn the lessons of History, stand up for religious freedom, speak out for freedom of conscience, expose the enemies of liberty and fight the good fight of Faith. All the darkness cannot put out the smallest light. We need to understand Islam and we need to Evangelise Muslims. Remember the persecuted. ***“Remember the prisoners as if chained with them – those who are mistreated – since you yourselves are in the body also.”*** Hebrews 13:3

Learning from History

As Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn wrote: *“If we do not know our own history, we will simply have to endure all the same mistakes, sacrifices and absurdities all over again.”*

“Now these things became our examples, to the intent that we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted... now all these things happened to them as examples, and they were written for our admonition...” 1 Corinthians 10:6-11

Dr. Peter Hammond

Frontline Fellowship

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725

Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021-689-4480

mission@frontline.org.za

www.frontlinemissionsa.org

Chapter 12

DUNKIRK – SEPARATING FACT FROM FICTION

Christopher Nolan's war drama *Dunkirk*, focuses on Operation Dynamo – The Evacuation of the British Expeditionary Force (BEF) from France, 26 May to 4 June 1940. With all the promotions of the film as “*incredibly accurate*” and “*true to the history*,” I was cautiously hopeful and looked forward to seeing the film.

Under Fire and Under Water

The cinematography is superb and audiences are presented with dramatic depictions of what it is like to be under fire and the terror of being trapped in darkness at night, inside the hold of a sinking ship. The heroism of the civilian “*little ships*” – over 700 of which helped in the evacuation - is very well depicted.

Distortions of History

However, there are many serious inaccuracies and inexplicable omissions. First of all, this film makes it seem that virtually every single Royal Navy vessel gets sunk! The Royal Navy seems helpless and heartless and does not get a fair credit for the superb evacuation operation they ran. In the 11 days of Operation Dynamo, the Royal Navy succeeded in evacuating over 338,000 men of which 215,000 were British and 123,000 were French. 95% of those evacuated were on Naval vessels. This was the greatest Naval evacuation to that date.

The British Army Did Not Collapse into Chaos

The British Expeditionary Force soldiers appear leaderless, undisciplined, helpless and fearful, abandoning their rifles, while being fired upon and generally not much of an army at all. I do not believe that their depiction of the BEF soldiers is a fair reflection on what was admittedly an army in defeat and retreat, but the lack of leadership and direction by officers on the beaches, seems more anachronistic. It may be the way that young people today would react in such a stressful situation. However, the historical record is that there was tremendous order and steadfastness amongst the soldiers, patiently waiting in line for boats to evacuate them back to Britain.

No Hospital Ship was Sunk at Dunkirk

The most outrageous inaccuracy is the depiction of a Hospital ship being sunk at Dunkirk! Sinking of Hospital ships is a serious war crime. One British Hospital ship struck a British mine just off Dover, within British waters. It did not sink.

Not a David Vs Goliath Operation

The impression given in Nolan's *Dunkirk*, is that the British were overwhelmed by a numerically superior enemy, which was not the case. Both the British and the French Armed Forces outnumbered the German Forces in terms of numbers of men, numbers of tanks and numbers of aircraft. The Royal Navy massively outnumbered everyone. The Royal Navy was the greatest Navy in the world. In September 1939, the Royal Navy included: 15 battleships, 7 aircraft carriers, 66 cruisers, over 200 destroyers, 60 submarines and 56 corvettes and many more were in building stages and would have been available by May 1940.

Naval Forces Engaged at Dunkirk

Although one sees little evidence of it in the *Dunkirk* film, for Operation Dynamo, the Royal Navy official history records that they utilised: 41 destroyers, 6 corvettes, 1 sloop, 2 gunboats, 36 minesweepers, 52 trawlers, 61 drifters, 3 special service vessels, 2 SB's, 6 MTB's, 3 armed boarding vessels, 40 schuyts, 26 yachts, 12 motor boats, 6 block ships, 13 landing craft and 8 dockyard fighters. The Royal Navy was also assisted by the French Navy, who provided 14 destroyers, 13 minesweepers, 12 cargo ships, 59 trawlers and 21 other vessels. The Belgians provided another 45 vessels and there were an additional 45 personnel ships (including Ferries), 8 Hospital ships and 40 Tugs.

No Shortage of Destroyers

The talk about the shortage of destroyers because High Command was keeping them safe – for the next battle - is nonsense as the Royal Navy held nothing back in evacuating British forces around the clock and at top speed. The talk of “*no Destroyers for 6 hours*” is ahistoric drivel.

Tides Were Not an Issue

The talk about tides adversely affecting the evacuation is also inaccurate. The East Mole breakwater made up of concrete and woodwork extending a mile into the sea was unaffected by the tides and soldiers waded into the surf to be loaded onto the smaller vessels at all times of the day and night.

Non Stop Evacuation for 7 Days

According to the *Dunkirk* film, the soldiers spent most of the time standing on the beach, waiting for ships without a single vessel in sight. However, the evacuation was a 24-hours-a-day operation. The mile long East Mole breakwater extended out to sea and was constantly busy with vessels being loaded on both sides, frequently with soldiers walking across one ship to reach a double-parked vessel on the other side.

Exaggeration of the Role of the Little Ships Ignores the Role of the Royal Navy

Nolan's *Dunkirk* film also greatly exaggerates the role of the *little ships*. While undoubtedly heroic, the impression given is that most of the soldiers were evacuated by *little ships*, when actually only about 5% were.

The Missing Royal Air Force

The power of the German Luftwaffe is greatly exaggerated in Nolan's film. The Royal Air Force had dominance over the beaches of Dunkirk as they had far shorter distances to fly from their air bases than the Luftwaffe had. In the film it seems that all the RAF could spare were 3 Spitfires. Actually Air Vice Marshall Keith Parks' Fighter Command Eleven Group in South East England, were sending over squadrons of 24 Spitfires at a time to provide constant combat air cover for the Royal Navy evacuation of the British Expeditionary Force from the beaches of Dunkirk. At no time were just 3 fighters sent out alone.

A Long 20 Miles

The maximum speed of a Spitfire is 362 miles per hour, yet they seemed to take an awfully long time to make the 20 miles from Dover to Dunkirk. One Spitfire in the film ran out of fuel (although not ammunition) and could not make the 20 miles back to Britain!

Fighters Did Not Approach Dunkirk at Sea Level

It is no doubt visually more impressive to see Spitfires screaming at virtual sea level hopping over the waves towards Dunkirk, but no fighter pilot worth his salt would have approached a combat zone flying at zero feet. Fighters need to come in from a height advantage and that would provide a speed advantage on the descent to target.

Inexhaustible Supply of Ammunition

Each spitfire was armed with 8 machine guns and each was loaded with 350 rounds (the origin of "*the whole nine yards*" terminology). A Spitfire could fire continuously for less than 15 seconds per flight. Pilots would rarely be able to shoot down more than a single enemy plane on one mission. However in *Dunkirk* one pilot shoots down four enemy aircraft, using up over 70 seconds worth of ammunition! (This must have been a real special issue Spitfire with an inexhaustible supply of ammunition, just for the film!)

No Pilot Would Land on a Beach with His Wheels Down

Incredibly the film concludes with a fighter pilot gliding his, out-of-fuel, Spitfire to land on a beach, using his under-carriage! Under no circumstances would any pilot attempt to land on a beach with their under-carriage down. The danger of the wheels sinking into the sand and tipping/crashing the plane into its nose, would be too severe. In such a circumstance, a belly-landing on the sand, or sea, would have been the only real option for the pilot.

Facts Ruin a Good Story

Encyclopaedia Britannica lists 78 Luftwaffe planes lost over Dunkirk and 84 Royal Air Force aircraft shot down. This fairly even record is not reflected in the *Dunkirk* film, which makes out that the 3 RAF Spitfires devastated the Luftwaffe.

Land, Sea and Air

The *Dunkirk* film interlinks 3 stories: Land, Sea and Air. The story of the evacuation of the soldiers, from the East Mole of Dunkirk is set to take place over **one week**. The story of one of the little ships takes place over **one day** and the story of the flight of three Spitfires is **one hour**.

Schizophrenic Screen Editing

Yet, somehow, these all interlink and, in the confusing manner of modern film editing, we are somehow to believe that the multiple events of the soldiers on the ground over one week, coincided at key times with the same aircraft, which were only over them for one hour and the little ships that took a day to travel from Britain and back. The timing doesn't add up.

The Absence of Naval Helmets

Kenneth Branagh's character, based on Naval officer, Captain Bill Tennant, spends the whole time standing on the Mole overseeing the evacuation, wearing his officer's cap. No Naval officer in an operational area, subject to aerial bombardment would have been without his helmet. Nor was there any reason why Captain Tennant would be

supervising the evacuation personally, by standing on the Mole, instead of from the bridge of a Naval vessel with his telecommunication systems and staff around him. There seemed to be no radio, or signaller, stationed on the Mole, making one wonder what possible difference this officer thought he could be making.

It is Not That Easy to Sink a Destroyer

The impression given in the film that virtually every Royal Navy vessel at Dunkirk was sunk by bomb, or torpedo, is false. Of the over 900 vessels that took part in the evacuation, 231 were lost. 70% of that was due to collision and misadventure in the channel. Only 37 vessels were sunk because of aerial attack, 7 by torpedo, 9 by mine and 7 by gunfire from the shore.

The Missing Smoke

The brilliant skies make for great cinematography, but veterans who were at Dunkirk described enormous palls of smoke rising from the harbour area, thick and impenetrable, obscuring visibility over much of the town. Both German and British fighter pilots reported seeing Dunkirk from many miles away from the smoke from the oil tanks burning continuously in the harbour. The Stuka dive bombers were not able to perform as impressively as depicted in the film. Stukas approached Dunkirk at 12,000 feet and released their bombs at closer to 6,000 feet. Which is why only six of the 41 Royal Navy destroyers at Dunkirk were sunk.

Without a Prayer

Some of the most important aspects of the Dunkirk evacuation that were left out of the movie include King George VI's call for an Empire-wide Day of Prayer and Repentance, to be held on 26 May 1940. When the British Expeditionary Force was in defeat and retreat, the King made an international broadcast, instructing the people of the British Empire to return to God in Repentance and humbly seek for Divine intervention to enable them to rescue their army from total destruction. Many millions of people across the British Isles and throughout the Empire flocked into churches, praying in shifts for deliverance. Churches were so packed that people were lined up for hours waiting to get into church, to take part in organised national Repentance.

Answers to Prayer

The record reports two events following this extraordinary Empire-wide call for Prayer. A violent storm arose over Dunkirk, grounding the Luftwaffe. Secondly a great calm descended on the English Channel, which fishermen said they had not seen for a generation. This allowed many hundreds of small boats to sail across and help rescue British soldiers. This led to most participants referring to the "*miracle of Dunkirk*." The King appointed Sunday, 9 June as an Empire-wide Day of Thanksgiving.

Mrs Miniver

This spiritual dimension is more honestly depicted in the 1942 film, *Mrs Miniver* (nominated for 12 Academy awards and won 6), which concluded with a church service and the congregation singing "*Onward Christian Soldiers*".

Why Did the Panzers Stop?

Also, not mentioned in the film, is why the victorious German Army stopped on the outskirts of Dunkirk. After a brilliant Blitzkrieg campaign of only two weeks, both the French and British Armies had been routed and flung back by two German armies, General Von Bock's Army Group B to the East and General Gerd Von Rundstedt's Army Group A to the South.

The Stop Order

Against the advice of his generals, Adolf Hitler then gave his famous and controversial "*Stop Order*," 24 May 1940. His point was that the battle was won and the British "*are not our natural enemies*." Hoping for peace with Britain and future cooperation in fighting communism in the East, Adolf Hitler told his High Command that the British have an Empire to care for and they must allow their forces to withdraw.

Abandoned Military Equipment

Also not depicted in the *Dunkirk* film was the colossal loss of military equipment. The British left behind on the beaches of Dunkirk. 45,000 motor vehicles, 20,000 motor cycles, 700 tanks, 11,000 machine guns, 850 anti-tank guns, 2,472 artillery pieces and some 76,000 tonnes of ammunition and 417,000 tonnes of stores - enough equipment to field 10 divisions. The *Dunkirk* film just depicts a pile of helmets.

Redefining Reality and Distorting History

Dunkirk illustrates again the modern tendency to redefine reality through dramatic and gripping presentations which claim to be "*inspired by true events*", or "*based on a true story*." However, the bias against Christianity, of all too many scriptwriters and film producers, leads to dangerous distortions of reality in the minds of those many people for whom Hollywood is their primary source of knowledge about the past.

Anti-Christian Prejudice

The censoring out of the spiritual dynamics surrounding Dunkirk and the urgent call by King George VI for an Empire-wide Day of Repentance and Prayer is inexcusable. It is delusional to pretend that people of that era were as secular as society is today.

Facts are Stubborn Things

A correct understanding of the past is an indispensable aid in making a better future. The truth is not only stranger than fiction – it is more gripping and impressive.

“Finally, brethren, whatever things are true, whatever things are noble, whatever things are just, whatever things are pure, whatever things are lovely, whatever things are of good report, if there is any virtue and if there is anything praiseworthy - meditate on these things.” Philippians 4:8

Dr. Peter Hammond

Reformation Society
P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725
Cape Town South Africa
Tel: 021-689-4480
mission@frontline.org.za
www.ReformationSA.org

Sources:

The Miracle of Dunkirk, by Walter Lord, 1982, Viking Press.

Pillar of Fire: Dunkirk 1940, by Ronald Atkin, 1990, Berlina.

Fateful Choices: Ten Decisions That Changed the World, by Ian Kershaw, 2008, Penguin.

Dunkirk: Retreat to Victory, by Major General Julian Thompson, 2009, Pan Books.

Chapter 13

KATYN

UNRAVELLING ONE OF THE MANY SECRETS OF WORLD WAR II

One of the most extraordinary mysteries, conspiracies and disinformation campaigns has finally been exposed, implicating numerous prominent heads of state in the atrocities and subsequent cover up scandals. A complex edifice of deception has been thoroughly dismantled by patient and persistent perseverance and pressure.

Mission to Poland

On a Mission to Poland in 1990, I saw a monument for the victims of the Katyn Forest Massacre in 1940, I questioned whether they did not mean 1941? *“Surely you don’t believe the Russian propaganda?”* they challenged me. I did not know what they were talking about. The Polish Christians were most agitated over my ignorance on this matter.

A Lesson in History

They explained that although Great Britain and France had declared war on Germany, 3 September 1939, ostensibly because Germany had invaded Poland, so Russia also invaded Poland in 1939. *“Of course most history books omit that fact.”* The Katyn Forest is deep in Soviet territory, closer to Moscow than Warsaw, they pointed out. Over 22,000 Polish prisoners, including over 8,000 officers, were murdered in cold blood by the Soviet NKVD in the spring of 1940. When this crime was discovered, Stalin’s Soviet Russia was an ally of Great Britain and the United States of America. Therefore they found it more convenient to attribute this Russian atrocity to their German enemies.

Judicial Fraud

The Polish Christians informed me that the British, Americans, and French chose to participate in judicial fraud at the Nuremberg Trials by indicting the German Army with what were plainly Communist atrocities committed by Soviet Russia.

Missing Polish Prisoners of War

In December 1941, the head of the London based Polish government-in-exile, General Wladyslaw Sikorski enquired of Soviet dictator, Joseph Stalin, what had become of Polish prisoners of war captured by the Soviets during their invasion of Poland in September 1939. Stalin assured Sikorski that all Polish POWs had been released. He opined that some might have moved to Manchuria.

Mass Graves Exhumed

In 1943, a German intelligence officer, Rudolph von Gersdorff, serving with the Abwehr, received reports about mass graves of Polish military officers near Katyn. A ditch 28 m long and 16 m wide was found which contained the bodies of 3,000 Polish officers piled up in 12 layers. This was only the first of many such graves to be unearthed. German soldiers unearthed numerous mass graves of many thousands of Polish officers who had been massacred in the Katyn Forest near Smolensk. German news reports claimed that this was yet another evidence of the war crimes and atrocities committed by the Communist commissars of the Soviet Union. When the German government announced the discovery of the mass graves in the Katyn Forest, the London based Polish government-in-exile requested an investigation by the International Committee of the Red Cross. Stalin immediately severed diplomatic relations with it and claimed that the victims had been murdered by the Nazis.

Investigation

The German government brought in a European Commission of 12 forensic experts and their staff from Belgium, Bulgaria, Denmark, Finland, France, Italy, Croatia, the Netherlands, Romania, Sweden, Slovakia and Hungary. Even Polish, American and British Prisoners of War were included in the investigation. The reports of these neutral investigators confirmed that the victims were indeed Polish officers, NCOs and intellectuals who were victims of Russian forces in the summer of 1940. When the Polish government-in-exile insisted on bringing the matter before the International Red Cross, General Sikorski died in an aircraft crash in July 1943, an event that was described as *“convenient to the allied leaders.”* Numerous books and documentary films have been made of *“The Assassination of General Sikorski.”*

The Burdenko Commission

The Soviets hastened to orchestrate an alternative Soviet version of the now disclosed massacre, to claim that the Polish POWs had been massacred, not by the Soviets, but by the Nazis. Nikolai Burdenko, the President of the Soviet Academy of Medicine, presided over a commission appointed by Stalin to investigate the incident. Burdenko claimed to have interviewed more than a hundred eyewitnesses who swore that the Nazis had massacred the Polish POWs in autumn, 1941.

The Nuremberg Trials

At the Nuremberg Tribunal of 1945-1946, the German military were proclaimed guilty of shooting Polish Prisoners of War in the Katyn Forest. So the Soviet version of the Katyn Massacre moved from war-time propaganda into school history books: *The Germans shot Polish Prisoners of War in Katyn Forest in 1941*.

Duplicity

The Polish-Soviet crisis threatened Western-Soviet relations and British Prime Minister Winston Churchill and US President Franklin Roosevelt were torn between their commitment to their Polish ally and the demands of Stalin. In private, Churchill agreed that the atrocity was most likely carried out by the Soviets. According to Edward Raczynski, Churchill admitted on 15 April 1943, during a conversation with General Sikorski: "*Alas, the German revelations are probably true. The Bolsheviks can be very cruel.*" However, on 24 April 1943, Churchill assured the Soviets: "*We shall certainly oppose vigorously any investigation by the International Red Cross or any other body...*" Classified UK documents concluded that Soviet guilt was "*a near certainty*", but the alliance with the Soviets was deemed to be more important than the moral issue. The official version parroted the Soviet propaganda and the censors suppressed all contradictory accounts.

Cover-up

The British Foreign Secretary pointed out several inconsistencies, and near impossibilities, in the Soviet version. Churchill's post-war account of Katyn skirts over the Katyn Massacre by referring to *the 1944 Soviet Enquiry which attributed guilt to the Germans* adding cryptically: "*belief seems an act of faith.*"

Suppressed

When US Navy *Lieutenant* Commander George Earle produced a report concluding that the massacres were committed by the Soviet Union, President Roosevelt ordered Earle's report to be suppressed. When Earle formally requested permission to publish his findings, the President issued a written order forbidding it. Earle was reassigned and spent the rest of the War in the remote island of American Samoa.

Reports Destroyed

Two senior American Prisoners of War, *Lieutenant Colonel Donald Stewart and Colonel John van Vliet, taken by the Germans to Katyn for investigation, submitted a report, after their release in 1945, that the Soviets were definitely responsible for the Massacre. George Marshall's Assistant Chief of Staff for Intelligence, Major General Clayton Bissell, destroyed the report. During the 1951-1952 Congressional Investigations, General Bissell defended his action before Congress arguing that it was not in the US interest to antagonise the Soviet Union which was America's ally.*

Embarrassed

The Americans and British were embarrassed by the Soviet inclusion of the Katyn Forest Massacre in the indictments against the German military at Nuremberg. Soviet General Roman Redenko, at the Nuremberg Tribunal stated that "*One of the most important criminal acts for which the major war criminals are responsible was the mass execution of Polish Prisoners of War shot in the Katyn Forest near Smolensk by the German Fascist invaders.*" Katyn was: "*The worst massacre of Prisoners of War in history.*"

Hypocrisy

For sheer bare-faced hypocrisy this accusation was classic. All present at the trial, including the one making the accusation, knew that this was judicial fraud and farce.

Censorship

The Black Book of Censorship in the People's Republic of Poland expressly stated: "*Any attempt to burden the Soviet Union with the responsibility for the deaths of Polish officers in Katyn Forest is forbidden.*" Further evidence that everyone knew who was really responsible, was that even the most simple memorial erected in Poland such as *Katyn 1940*, was confiscated by police and destroyed. The Polish practice was to erect memorial crosses on All Saints' Day. These were always dismantled by the police. If Katyn had really been a Nazi atrocity, it would not have been a taboo subject in Communist controlled countries. Not only did the Soviet Union forbid any monuments to be erected to victims of the Katyn Massacre, but the British government also objected to plans to build a Katyn monument in the UK.

Disinformation Campaign

In the 1960s, the Soviets launched a Disinformation Offensive to side-track the persistent accusations of Soviet atrocities and massacres throughout Eastern Europe. A village in Belarus, Khatyn, whose name is very similar to Katyn, was chosen as a site for a memorial to commemorate *the victims of Nazi atrocities*. Apparently 149 Khatyn villagers had been massacred by Ukrainian and Belarus soldiers fighting for the Nazis in March 1943.

This Khatyn Memorial became an obligatory stop for all foreign visitors. This Disinformation Campaign scored its major success in 1974 when US President Richard Nixon was brought to Khatyn to remember the Polish victims of the Nazis! From this time all Soviet publications displaced Katyn with Khatyn, including in Polish encyclopaedias and historical dictionaries.

Facts are Stubborn Things

Every Soviet leader had to deal with the persistent Polish charges of the Katyn Forest Massacre. The Polish Solidarity movement in the 1980s used underground printing presses to expose the Soviet duplicity and print the facts about the Katyn Forest Massacre.

Gorbachev's Glasnost

Mikhail Gorbachev launched an historical commission in 1987 to create a new Soviet version of what had *actually* happened at Katyn. Gorbachev's Politburo proposed in 1988 to build a memorial to the victims of the massacre "*executed by Hitlerites in Katyn*" alongside a memorial to 500 Soviet POWs supposedly also killed at Katyn by the Germans - a myth created by the Burdenko Commission with absolutely no evidence that it ever happened at all. Gorbachev also offered the Poles "*a simplified procedure*" for relatives wishing to visit the sites where their loved ones lay buried.

One of the Worst Crimes Ever

However the Polish historians tenaciously exposed the Russian responsibility, and the Catholic church in Poland labelled the Katyn Massacre "*one of the worst crimes in the history of mankind.*"

Exposure

Gorbachev's trusted advisor, Valentin Falin, reported that Polish historians subverted the Soviet Commission by producing their own evidence exposing the 1944 Burdenko Report as spurious. Without waiting for the Soviet Commission's response, the Poles began publishing the facts. The problem stubbornly refused to go away. Even the communist puppet government of Jaruzelski was forced to admit that "*the liquidation of the Polish officers was the responsibility, of the USSR.*"

Admission

On the symbolic date of 13 April 1990, 47 years after Berlin radio had announced the discovery of the massacre site, Gorbachev handed over two boxes of evidence to the Poles. The documents made clear that the Katyn Massacre was the work of the head of the NKVD, Lavrenty Beria. Gorbachev attempted to convince the Poles that more than 20,000 Polish nationals had been executed by the secret police chief *without any authority from the Soviet Politburo!*

Deception Rejected

This limited confession and further attempts at deception only enraged the Polish people further. An investigation conducted by the Prosecutor General's Office of the Soviet Union in 1991, and later by the Russian Federation, confirmed Soviet responsibility for the massacres. However the Russian Federation later tried to diminish the number of the deaths to 1,803 Polish citizens. They also refused to classify the action as a war crime, or as an act of genocide. They declared the investigation closed on the grounds that the perpetrators of the massacre were already dead.

Finally the Truth Comes Out

In October 1992, *Boris Yeltsin*, who had replaced Gorbachev, lowered the Soviet flag, abolished the Soviet Union and handed over "*newly found*" secret documents from the Soviet Politburo to Polish president Lech Walensa. The Politburo order dated 5 March 1940, was entitled, *Question of the NKVD*. In it Beria informed Stalin that 14,736 Polish officers, officials, police officials, gendarmes and other intellectuals were being held in prison camps in occupied Polish territory and that 18,632 similar people were being held in camps in the Western Provinces of Ukraine and Belarus. Beria requested permission to shoot them all.

Stalin's Order

Stalin's "*in favour*" and bold signature are scrawled at the top of Beria's question. Five other Politburo members also signed and approved the execution order. The document was labelled **Top Secret**. Of the total killed, about 8,000 were Polish military officers taken prisoner during the September 1939 Soviet invasion of Poland. Another 6,000 were police officers, with the rest being Polish Intelligentsia arrested for being "*bourgeois*". The Katyn Forest Massacre was justified by Stalin's Politburo as necessary to deprive a potential future Polish military of its leadership. Since Russia intended to keep the Eastern portion of Poland, he was determined to deprive it of a large proportion of its military and intellectual elite.

Cold Blooded Mass Murder

Those who were murdered, in the first batch alone, included: an Admiral, 2 Generals, 24 Colonels, 79 *Lieutenant Colonels*, 258 Majors, 654 Captains, 17 Naval Captains, 3,420 NCOs, 7 Chaplains, 20 University Professors, 300 Physicians, hundreds of lawyers, engineers and teachers, more than one hundred writers and journalists and over 200 pilots. Altogether during the massacres, the NKVD murdered 14 Polish Generals. Vasili Mikhailovich Blokhin, the Chief Executioner for the NKVD, is reported to have personally shot and killed 7,000 of the condemned, from the Ostashkov Camp, over a period of 28 days in April 1940.

A Legacy of Deception

Further documents revealed that every Soviet chairman since Joseph Stalin had signed out the Politburo's Katyn file and were well aware of the Russian complicity in this crime. In a Memo dated 20 March 1959, to Chairman Khrushchev, Interior Minister Alexander Shelepin reported: *"The Committee of State Security... has held, since 1940, case files and other materials regarding prisoners and interned officers, policemen, gendarmes, military settlers, landowners, etc., persons from former bourgeois Poland who were shot in the same year. In all, on the basis of the decision of a special Troika of the NKVD, USSR, 21,857 people were shot... the entire operation was carried out on the basis of the decision of the Central Committee of 5 March 1940. Since 1940, no information from these files was released to anyone. All of the files, numbering 21,857, have been stored in a sealed location. To Soviet organs, all of these files represent neither operational interest, nor historical value. It is also doubtful that they could be of any real value to our Polish friends. Quite the contrary, any unforeseen incident may lead to revealing the operation with all the undesirable consequences for our state. This is especially so because regarding those shot in the Katyn Forest, there is an official version supported by an Investigation carried out on the initiative of the Soviet state in 1944, by the Burdenko Commission... which concluded that all of the Poles liquidated there are considered to have been killed by the German invaders. The conclusions of the commission became firmly established in international public opinion. It seems appropriate to destroy all of the records regarding the persons shot in 1940, in the above mentioned operation."*

Evidence Destroyed

Shelepin's recommendation to purge the records was carried out with these over 21,000 case files destroyed. However, the Politburo Execution Order and Memo from Beria remained in the official record. Files later released from Gorbachev's time included advice from advisors, that should the truth of the Katyn Forest Massacre come out, *people could be convinced that the Soviet Union was no better than, and may have been worse than, Nazi Germany during the war, and that the Soviet Union bears no less responsibility for the war.*

Polish Deportations

Polish historians point out that during the 1930s, hundreds-of-thousands of Poles living in the Western areas of the Soviet Union were marked out for persecution by Stalin - either execution, or deportation to Central Asia. The Soviet invasion of Poland in September 1939, was followed by more waves of arrests and mass deportations to the East. When the Katyn Forest Massacre took place, hundreds-of-thousands of Poles, mostly the better-educated and economically active citizens, were already in exile in Siberia, or in labour camps in Central Asia. They were herded there in horribly overcrowded freight trains and at least one out of every five of them died during transportation to the Soviet concentration camps.

Oppression

Between 320,000, to possibly up to 1 million, Polish citizens were deported to the Soviet Union. Of one group of 12,000 Poles incarcerated in Delstroy, near Kolyma, in 1940, only 583 survived by 1942. Over 570,000 Polish citizens were arrested and incarcerated in concentration camps by the Soviets during the war. Polish prisoners were subjected to lengthy interrogations between October 1939 and February 1940. These interviews were a selection process to determine who would live and who would die. According to NKVD reports, if the prisoners could not be persuaded to adopt a pro-communist attitude, they were declared *"hardened and uncompromising enemies of Soviet authority"* and condemned to death.

Further Massacres

When Germany launched Operation Barbarossa in the summer of 1941, the NKVD concentration camp guards massacred thousands of Polish prisoners before fleeing eastwards to avoid the German advance.

The Betrayal of Warsaw

When the war was reaching its end and the Red Army was at the very gates of Warsaw, radio broadcasts from Russia urged the Polish citizens to *rise up in revolt!* The Soviet Army was then ordered to stand by and *render no assistance* as the Germans crushed the Warsaw Uprising. Stalin said that it was better that all resistance in Poland be crushed before a Soviet occupation.

South Africa's Support Remembered

The Polish Christians in 1990 reminded me that only the South African Air Force had flown in weapons and aid to the Polish underground during the Warsaw Uprising. I was surprised. I had read that the RAF had done so - but that was another lie. It was actually the SAAF, but because of apartheid, historians had expunged South Africa's role and replaced it with the RAF. The fact that history books could be re-written to conform to politically correct dictates is disturbing.

Never Liberated

Polish citizens strenuously objected to any suggestion that they had been "liberated" by the Soviets. "*The Soviets never liberated anyone!*" they insisted. The first act of the Soviets on occupying Poland was arresting all leaders of the underground army and government. Polish Christians pointed out that most of the atrocities attributed to the Germans were actually communist atrocities committed by the Soviets and conveniently blamed on their enemies. Polish relatives of the victims continued to urge the European Court of Human Rights to rule on the crimes of the Stalin regime.

Putin's Perspective

To Vladimir Putin's Russia, the Katyn Forest Massacre is an inconvenient truth which taints Russian *war-time heroism*. Putin's chief military prosecutor, Alexander Savenkov, issued a ruling on Katyn on 11 March 2005, in which they acknowledged that the NKVD Troika found 14,542 Polish citizens, held in NKVD camps, *guilty of committing state crimes* and made a decision to shoot them in the spring of 1940. Putin's representative claims that these Soviet officials "*abused their authority,*" but that no criminal cases could be opened against them because the guilty parties had since died. The Polish claim of genocide was rejected and although they agreed to hand over 67 of the 183 volumes of evidence, two thirds of the remaining evidence was to remain classified.

Outrage

The Polish parliament was outraged and demanded that Russia's Katyn archives all be declassified and that Russian courts rule that the Katyn Forest Massacre was an act of genocide. Communists throughout the world would prefer the truth about Katyn to be buried, but Christians in Poland, and throughout Eastern Europe, determined to exhume the secrets and expose the true nature of Soviet Communism.

Pressure

Human Rights societies continued to pressure the Russian government, until in November 2010, the Russian Duma approved the declaration blaming Stalin and other Soviet officials for having personally ordered the Massacre of Polish Prisoners of War. This was only after the disastrous plane crash of Polish leaders, enroute to Katyn for the 70th Anniversary Commemoration.

Death Flight

On 10 April 2010, an aircraft carrying Polish President Lech Kaczynski, his wife and 87 other politicians and high-ranking army officers, crashed near Smolensk, killing all 96 on board the aircraft. The passengers were to attend a ceremony marking the 70th anniversary of the Katyn Massacre. The Polish people were convinced that they were the victims of a communist terror campaign which assassinated their president and senior leaders on the eve of the most important and solemn anniversary of this massacre. Many observed that it was like the assassination of General Sikorski in 1943. In the furore following the death flight of the Polish government, the Russian Duma finally acknowledged Russia's guilt for the Katyn Forest Massacre.

War Crime

In 2011, the European Court of Human Rights declared admissible two complaints of relatives of the massacre victims against Russia concerning the inadequacy of their investigations. In a ruling on 16 April 2012, the court found that Russia had violated the rights of victims' relatives and described the Massacre as a war-crime. It has taken 77 years, but facts are stubborn things.

"They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves of depravity..." 2 Peter 2:19

Dr. Peter Hammond

Sources:

Katyn: The Untold Story of Stalin's Polish Massacre, by Allen Paul, Scribner, 1991

Katyn and the Soviet Massacre of 1940: Truth, Justice and Memory, by George Sanford, 2005

Katyn: A Crime Without Punishment, by Anna Cienciala, Jael University Press, 2007

Class Cleansing: The Katyn Massacre, by Victor Zaslavski, Telos Press, 2008

World War II Behind Closed Doors, by Laurence Rees, Random House, 2010

Katyn: Stalin's Massacre and the Triumph of Truth, by Allen Paul, Northern Illinois University Press, 2010

THE BOMBING OF CITIES IN WORLD WAR II

Bombarded

On Mission outreaches in Sudan I experienced aerial, artillery and rocket bombardments. However these experiences were insignificant compared to that of my parents in the Second World War. My Father served in the British Army for the whole 6 years of the war. He told me of the Heinkel III's coming over his military base and turning his barracks into matchsticks as he lay flat on the parade ground with debris blown high into the air pummeling him into the ground! My mother was only 6 years old when she experienced her first bombing. It was September 1940 and she was at the circus in Berlin when the British bombed them. She was almost trampled in the stampede to flee the exploding bombs. Many times my mother heard the air raid sirens and had to rush to the air raid shelters. Frequently she saw the green and red parachute flares dropped by the lead bombers to guide the thousand bombers where to unleash their cargo of death and destruction. Her neighbourhood was turned into blazing rubble.

Uncivilised

Eminent British War historian, Captain Sir Basil Liddle Hart, described the strategic bombing campaign by RAF Bomber Command during the Second World War as: *The most uncivilised means of warfare that the world had known since the Mongol invasions.*

Contrary to International Law

British Prime Minister Neville Chamberlain declared that England's policy of bombing cities in Germany: *was absolutely contrary to international law.* Just before being ousted in Winston Churchill's coup, Prime Minister Chamberlain announced: *His Majesty's government will never resort to the deliberate attack on women and children and other civilians, for the purpose of mere terrorism.*

Bombers for Victory

Shortly after replacing Chamberlain as Prime Minister, Winston Churchill declared: *Our supreme effort must be to gain overwhelming mastery in the air... the bombers alone can provide the means to victory.*

Bombing Alone

Marshal of the Royal Air Force, Lord Trenchard, as early as 1921, declared that: *The next war could be won by bombing alone, by destroying the enemy's will to resist.* From this perspective, an entire strategic philosophy developed, which was to dominate British and later American, military strategy.

Quick and Easy Victory

It was the Italian General Giulio Douhet, who predicted that in the next war, bombers would inflict millions of civilian casualties in a matter of days.

Targeting Civilians

Stanley Baldwin described this new military philosophy in the House of Commons: *The only defence is offence, which means that you have to kill more women and children, more quickly than the enemy, if you want to save yourselves.*

Irrational Predictions

Although aircraft was only invented in 1903 and first used militarily in the First World War (1914 – 1918), books and films had developed a public dread of aerial bombing out of all proportion to its actual threat. Inspired more by the science fiction novels of H. G. Wells and Alexander Korda's film, *Things to Come*, Royal Air Force experts declared, as an article of faith: *that the bomber will always get through.*

Counter Technology

Strangely, these men failed to anticipate that technical developments in one area of warfare are soon matched by counter measures in other areas. Aircraft had advanced rapidly in WWI. Just as gas warfare was soon countered by gas masks, anti-aircraft technology would soon catch up. Night bombers would soon be countered by night fighters.

Indirect Warfare

Yet many British politicians and military leaders leapt upon this philosophy of faint hearts. After the disastrous battles of WWI, with entire divisions decimated in the battle of the Somme, Passchendaele and Ypres, the British feared to face the German soldier on the battlefield and sought for an indirect way of winning a war. Instead of losing hundreds-of-thousands of soldiers facing the German army on the ground, they would drop millions of tonnes of bombs on German cities from a safe height of ten thousand feet or more.

Total Warfare

British military strategists concluded that what had actually won the First World War was the British Naval blockade, which had led to starvation conditions in Germany. It became an article of faith amongst the chiefs of

staff that the bombing of German cities would achieve victory in the war without the need to commit their armies to the kind of ground war that had caused so many casualties on the Western front in 1914 to 1918. Underlying this philosophy was the assumption that German civilians would crack under the pressure of sustained bombing. Actually, despite enduring the most sustained aerial bombardment for over five years, they never did crack. In fact war production steadily increased.

The Spanish Civil War

When, during the Spanish Civil War, the nationalists bombed Barcelona, in 1938, reportedly 1,300 inhabitants were killed. From this British aerial experts concluded that each tonne of bombs dropped would inflict 72 casualties. This figure was treated as definitive and on this basis, the Home Office predicted one million casualties in London in the first few days of the next war. But this alarmist nonsense had no basis in fact. In fact the casualty rates at Barcelona were barely 3 casualties to every tonne of bombs dropped. Of the half a million killed in the entire Spanish War, less than 3% were killed by air raids. However, as those facts did not support Bomber Command's philosophy, they were suppressed at the time.

The Absence of German Heavy Bombers

The fact that the German Luftwaffe had no four engine bombers, nor any plans to produce any in the future, was also suppressed. The entire German Luftwaffe was plainly geared to ground support of the Wehrmacht. The Heinkel 111 and Stuka Ju-87s had very small bomb capacities and were only designed for ground support of Panzer divisions. Plainly Germany had no intention of strategic bombing of cities. Germany's heaviest bomber did not even have the capacity to carry 10% the payload of bombs that a British Lancaster was designed for.

First Blood

The earliest British air raids on Germany were quite disappointing for Bomber Command. On 4th September 1939, the day after Britain declared war on Germany, an RAF attack on a German sea plane base resulted in 24 out of the 28 British bombers being shot down. The survivors managed to drop a few bombs, by mistake, on the Danish town of Esbjerg. This was 190 km from the target!

Failure

Air raids on German warships in Wilhelmshaven were also ineffective. The few bombs that hit their targets either did not explode, or bounced off the German armour causing no damage at all. The early casualties suffered by the British bombers were extreme. Two air raids on oil installations in the Ruhr, by over 300 British bombers achieved no hits and no damage to the plants.

Inaccurate and Ineffective

Photographic evidence on the RAF bombing raids on the industrial Ruhr in Germany revealed that less than 10% of British bombers got within five miles of their target and that the bombs dropped by these aircraft were dispersed in an area 75 square miles around the intended target. During the air raids of 1940 and 1941, more British air crew died than German victims of the bombings.

More Failure

The German battle cruisers *Scharnhorst* and *Gneisenau* at Brest were attacked by 1,723 sorties. Almost 2,000 tonnes of bombs were dropped on these ships, yet the *Scharnhorst* and *Gneisenau* survived these air raids, mostly unscathed.

Disproportionate Resources

RAF Bomber Command received more funding, labour, strategic materials and equipment than all other branches of the British military combined. The labour of thousands of workers in factories all over Britain was being scattered across Germany to no good purpose. Raw materials that could have been better used to build tanks, ground support aircraft, fighters, dive bombers, machine guns, rifles, medical supplies, etc. were being squandered to fulfil an obsession with the bomber as the war-winning weapon to beat all weapons.

Squandered Resources

Yet, far from winning the war, the Bomber almost lost it by absorbing the resources that could have been used to equip Britain with genuine weapons of war. Instead of recognising that the Strategic Bombing Campaign was a failure, the chiefs of staff determined to concentrate on the bombing of cities. A policy of terrorising the German population became a fundamental component of the Strategic Bombing Campaign of the RAF.

Saturation Bombing of Cities

Recognising that navigational aids were deficient and that the bomb sights used were highly inaccurate, Bomber Command determined to concentrate entire Air Wings into Thousand Bomber Raids on German cities. These night time saturation bombings wouldn't be able to miss their targets, because they would concentrate on the centre of large cities. Killing Germans, any Germans, became the policy of Bomber Command. Between 1940 and 1945, 61 German cities were destroyed in bombing campaigns by RAF Bomber Command. At least two million Germans civilians were killed by the air raids of the RAF and USAAF.

Illegal Targeting of Civilians

Indiscriminate bombing was internationally outlawed. The Washington Treaty of 1922 expressly forbade the use of bombing against civilian populations. United States government propaganda films condemned the Japanese Empire for bombing of cities, such as Shanghai. Yet upon America's entry into the war, US General, H. H. Arnold, advocated the policy of strategic bombing of cities, such as Shanghai, as *the only way* that Germany could be beaten.

Non-Combatants

Winston Churchill commented: *The air opened paths along which death and terror could be carried far behind the lines of the actual enemy; to women, children, the aged, the sick, who in earlier struggles would perform have been left untouched.*

Provoking Counter Reaction

Air Ministry historian, Dennis Richards, in the official History of the Royal Air Force (1939-1945) wrote: *If the Royal Air Force raided the Ruhr, destroying oil plants with its most accurately placed bombs and urban property for those that went astray, the outcry for retaliation against Britain might prove too strong for the German Generals to resist. Indeed, Hitler himself would probably lead the clamour. The attack on the Ruhr was therefore an informal invitation to the Luftwaffe to bomb London.*

The Great Decision

The Principal Secretary to the Air Ministry in Britain reported: *We began to bomb objectives on the German mainland before the Germans began to bomb objectives on the British mainland... Because we were doubtful about the psychological effect of the truth, that it was we who started the strategic bombing offensive, we have shrunk from giving our great decision of May 11, 1940, the publicity it deserves. (Bombing Vindicated by J. M. Spaight, Principal Secretary to the Air Ministry.)*

Total Warfare

In an interview with the New York Times, 10 January 1946, Air Marshal Tedder declared that Germany had lost the war because she had not followed the principle of Total Warfare.

War Psychosis

Dennis Richards in *The Royal Air Force, 1939-1945, The Fight at Odds* observed: *Retaliation was certain if we carried the war into Germany... there was a reasonable possibility that our capital and industrial centres would not have been attacked if we had continued to refrain from attacking those of Germany... the primary purpose of these raids was to goad the Germans into undertaking reprisal raids of a similar character on Britain. Such raids would arouse intense indignation in Britain against Germany and so create a war psychosis without which it would be impossible to carry on a modern war.*

Emotional Engineering

British Jurist, F. J. P. Veale, in *Advance to Barbarism*, observed: *It is one of the greatest triumphs of modern emotional engineering that, in spite of the plain facts of the case, which could never be disguised, or even materially distorted, the British public, throughout the Blitz period (1940-1941), remained convinced that the entire responsibility for the sufferings it was undergoing, rested on the German leaders. Too high praise cannot, therefore, be lavished on the British emotional engineers for the infinite skill with which the public mind was conditioned prior to and during a period of unparalleled strain. The inhabitants of Coventry, for example, continued to imagine that their sufferings were due to the innate villainy of Adolf Hitler, without a suspicion that a decision, splendid or otherwise, of the British War Cabinet, was the decisive factor in this case.*

Terror Bombing

Sir Archibald Sinclair, Secretary for Air, declared: *I am in full agreement of terror bombing. I am all for the bombing of working class areas in German cities.* On 5 July 1941, the city of Münster in Germany was bombed by 63 British Wellington Bombers, just after midnight. The city was unprepared and without any anti-aircraft protection. By the end of the war more than 90% of the old city of Münster was destroyed.

Lubeck

On the night of 28 March 1942, 234 Wellington and Sterling Bombers dropped over 400 tonnes of bombs on Lübeck. 1,468 buildings were destroyed, 2,180 were seriously damaged and 9,103 were lightly damaged. 62% of all buildings in Lübeck were damaged or destroyed.

Cologne

On the night of 30 May 1942, Cologne was destroyed by RAF Bomber Command. 2,000 tonnes of high explosives were delivered by 1,046 bombers in 90 minutes. Luftwaffe Commander, Hermann Göring, refused to believe the reports: *It's impossible! That many bombs cannot be dropped in a single night!*

Bremen

On 25 June 1942, the British launched 1,067 bombers against the German port city of Bremen. This air raid succeeded in killing 85 people, destroying 572 houses, for the loss of 53 aircraft.

Contrasts in Casualties

Because the Luftwaffe was not equipped with strategic bombers, the contrast between casualties caused by the Blitz in England and the saturation bombing of German cities is stark. Coventry lost 100 acres through bombing. Approximately 300 people in Coventry lost their lives due to air raids by the Luftwaffe. Yet the RAF bombing of Hamburg killed over 70,000 civilians.

Firebombing Hamburg

Between 24 July and 2 August 1943, RAF Bomber Command unleashed *Operation Gomorrah* against the coastal town of Hamburg in Germany. 8,000 pound blockbusters and 4,000 pound *cookie* bombs knocked out roofs and windows. Subsequent waves dropped 350,412 incendiary bombs to start fires. Crews of Halifax Bombers reported a mass of raging fires in Hamburg, rising to 19,000 feet. Lead Bombers dropped parachute flare markers to guide the following bombers as to where to release their bombs in the dark. As the waterworks were destroyed first, there was no running water with which the fire brigade could extinguish the sea of flames, which soon engulfed the entire city.

Night and Day

The next day, 25 July, US Army Air Force B17 Flying Fortress Bombers, unleashed further destruction upon the stricken city of Hamburg. The British lost only 12 aircraft during the night raid. The Americans lost 15 aircraft during their day raid. For 10 days and nights, the RAF and USAAF kept up a relentless day and night bombardment of the doomed city. 16,000 residential buildings in Hamburg were destroyed.

Amidst the Ruins

Incredibly, by the end of 1943, the aircraft industry, chemical industry and submarine building factories were back to almost pre-bombing capacity. However, 70,000 civilians had died in the 10 day fire-bombing of Hamburg.

The Destruction of Dresden

Between 13 and 15 February 1945, the city of Dresden was destroyed by over 2,000 bombers of the RAF and the USAAF. Dresden had been chosen as a target by the Soviets. Joseph Stalin persuaded Churchill and Roosevelt at Yalta to target Dresden, which was a major receiving area for refugees. The city was swollen with civilians fleeing the Red Army's rapid and destructive advance. On the evening of 13 February 1945, 796 Lancaster's and 9 de Havilland Mosquitos dropped 1,478 tonnes of high explosive and 1,182 tonnes of incendiary bombs between 22:14 and 22:22. Three hours later another 1,800 tonnes of bombs were dropped by a second group of Lancasters.

Successful

The first official reports on the air raid on Dresden described it as one of the most successful of the Thousand Bomber Raids: *Our pilots report that as there was little flak they were able to make careful and straight runs over the targets without bothering much about their defences; a terrific concentration of fires was started in the centre of the city.* The British described the raid as one of the powerful blows promised by the Allied leaders to Joseph Stalin at Yalta.

Disgrace

Allied Bombers who were involved in the fire-bombing of Dresden later recalled the sense of shame they felt when no anti-aircraft fire, or night fighters, opposed their bombing of the city. Numerous historians and jurists have described the bombing of the cities of Germany as a war crime and a holocaust. Yet British Air Marshal "Bomber" Arthur Harris, the Bomber Command chief directly responsible for the saturation bombing of civilian centres, was knighted for his efforts!

Scandal

News reports from neutral countries, such as Sweden and Switzerland, pointed out that Dresden was one large hospital city swollen with refugees fleeing the advancing Red Army. They also pointed out that the main railway station on the outskirts of town was unaffected by the bombing which targeted the residential section of town. 22 Hospitals had been destroyed in Dresden. One British commentator asked: *Who the devil is going to get anything out of it? We contribute the bombs and the machines and the crews who don't return from these raids, the Dresdeners themselves don't get anything out of it, naturally. The only ones who look like they're getting anything are the Russians – they get Dresden at our expense. I don't see any reason why we should go and kill people for the benefit of the Russians alone. Do you?*

Bombing Refugees

An Associated Press radio despatch put out from Paris was broadcast throughout the United States describing the: *Deliberate Terror Bombings of German population centres... carried out by heavy bombers of the Allied Air Forces on residential sections of Berlin, Dresden... with the unprecedented day and night assault on the refugee crowded capital, with civilians fleeing from the Red Tide in the East.*

Exceptional Cowardice

Americans had traditionally viewed with suspicion the RAF Bomber Command strategy of bombing cities. Now Americans learned that American Bombers were involved in the same terror raids on civilians. The report noted that, as all available German air forces were concentrated on the Eastern Front to combat the Red Army offensive which threatened to destroy Germany and all of Europe, the targeting of civilian centres in Germany seemed *exceptional cowardice*.

Military Objectives

As this AP News Report was widely broadcast by radio throughout the United States, General Eisenhower and General Henry Arnold cabled General Spaatz, to clarify that the USAAF was *only targeting military objectives* and not engaging in area bombing of cities. General Carl Spaatz gave an ambiguous and dishonest assurance that the USAAF only attacked *military objectives*. This of course was not true.

Barbaric Bombing

American Historian Professor Harry Elmer Barnes, wrote: *It was the indiscriminate bombing of civilians by the so-called strategic air forces during the Second World War which culminated in the destruction of Dresden (a wholly non-military objective) in February 1945, that completely pulverised the code of civilised warfare and returned the treatment of military opponents and civilians to the level of the primary warfare that had prevailed among the savages, the Assyrians and the Medieval Mongols. On the basis of the most authoritative British sources, Mr Veale demonstrates clearly that it was the British and not the Germans who introduced indiscriminate strategic bombing, despite the efforts of Hitler to avert this reversion to barbaric practices.*

Kassel

The German town of Kassel suffered over 300 air raids, some by Thousand Bomber Raids, the British by night and the Americans by day. When on 4 April 1945, the city surrendered barely 15,000 remained of an original population of 250,000.

Wiener Neustadt

Wiener Neustadt in Austria emerged from the air raids with only 18 houses intact and its population of 45,000 reduced to just 860.

The True Heroes

The London Times Review on the British official History of the Strategic Air Offensive, commented: *One closes these volumes feeling uneasy, that the true heroes of the story they tell are neither the contending Air Marshals, nor even the 58,888 officers and men of Bomber Command who were killed in action. The heroes were the inhabitants of the German cities under attack; the men, women and children who stoically endured and worked on among the flaming ruins of their homes and factories, up till the moment when the Allied Armies overran them.*

Going Too Far

In the course of watching a British propaganda film showing the bombing of German cities from the air, British Prime Minister Winston Churchill suddenly sat bolt upright and asked Lord Casey: *Are we beasts? Are we taking this too far?*

Propaganda War

Throughout the world there were shockwaves of revulsion against the bombing of Dresden. This compelled the propaganda ministries to seek to generate as much counter accusations of atrocities against the enemy to justify the targeting of whole cities for destruction. Soon, pictures of starving inmates of labour camps were being published widely. The fact that the starvation was caused by the Naval Blockade and Aerial Bombardment of Germany was, of course, not pointed out.

Distortion

As virtually every harbour, railway junction and bridge in Germany had been bombed, all basic services had broken down in the final months of the war, starvation was widespread and epidemics of typhus had erupted. Even pictures of German civilians laid out in the centre of bombed out towns were published with the caption that these were victims of German death camps. American soldiers in Dachau had German civilians drag victims of typhus into the showers, which the Americans then claimed had been gas chambers. Later all parties agreed that there never had been a gas chamber at Dachau and the Americans were ordered to dismantle the structure they had built after the war to show to tourists. By then virtually all the prison wardens at Dachau had been massacred by the American forces for the crime which they now admitted had not taken place there.

Admission of Guilt

The American judge at the Nuremberg Trials, Nicholas Biddle, later acknowledged that: *Germany waged a much cleaner war than we did.* Winston Churchill acknowledged that had Germany won the war he could have been tried as a war criminal for having authorised the bombing of cities. Marshall of the RAF, Lord Trenchard, once declared: *I can't write what I mean, I can't say what I mean, but I expect you to know what I mean.*

General Purpose Dud

The official historian of the Strategic Air Offensive, Sir Charles Webster, noted that half of the bomber sorties made over Germany were a complete waste of time. The weapon with which most British bombers were armed, the general purpose bomb, was so unreliable and ineffective as to constitute a waste of strategic resources: *Between 1939 and 1945, Bomber Command dropped over half a million 500 pound general purpose bombs and nearly 150,000 250 pound general purpose bombs. Not only were these bombs unsuited to the task for which they were used, because of their general characteristics, which consisted of an unhappy compromise between strength of casing and weight of explosive, but they were also relatively inefficient and all too often defective, weapons.*

Poor Workmanship

It is estimated that nearly 40% of all bombs dropped by the British in 1940, failed to detonate. Even the 4,000 pound bombs frequently broke up on impact, without exploding. It was observed that Bomber Command wasted thousands of air crew who lost their lives carrying defective bombs to Germany. This was described as bad as sending men into battle with their rifles loaded with blanks.

Evaluating the Strategic Bombing Campaign

It is now clear that General Douhet and Trenchard were wrong. Bombers did not win the war. In fact, one can safely say that not only did the bombing of cities not shorten the duration of the war, but the Strategic Bombing Campaign actually prolonged the war and exponentially increased the death toll of that war.

Unethical and Counter Productive

Unwilling to face the German soldier on the battlefield, these strategists were prepared to drop bombs on his family from a safe height of over 10,000 feet. This indirect way of winning a war proved to be an illusion. Over two million people were killed and millions more injured and crippled as a result. The strategic bombing of cities proved to be not only unethical, but counterproductive.

Dr. Peter Hammond

Frontline Fellowship

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725

Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021-689-4480

Email: mission@frontline.org.za

Website: www.frontlinemissionsa.org

Bibliography and Recommended Books:

The Destruction of Dresden by David Irving, McMillan, 1963

The Evolution of Warfare by Basil Liddle Hart, Baber and Faber, 1946

Advance to Barbarism by F. J. P. Veale, Miter Press, London

The Strategic Air Offensive Against Germany by Her Majesty's Stationery Office, London, 1961

The Royal Air Force, 1939 – 1945: The Fight at Obs, H. M. Stationery Office

The Night Hamburg Died by Martin Caidin, Ballantine Books, 1960

Death of a City by Michael McLaughlin, Historical Review Press, Brighton

History of the Second World War by Captain Basil Liddle Hart, Cassell, London

An audio CD of this lecture, as presented to The Reformation Society, is available from: Christian Liberty Books, PO Box 358, Howard Place 7450, Cape Town, South Africa, Tel: 021-689-7478, Fax: 086-551-7490, Email: admin@christianlibertybooks.co.za and Website: www.christianlibertybooks.co.za.

WERE ATOMIC BOMBS NECESSARY TO END WORLD WAR II?

Did the Atomic Bombs Actually Save Lives?

We were taught that the U.S. dropped nuclear bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki in order to end WWII and save both American and Japanese lives. But most of the top American military officials at the time said otherwise. The U.S. Strategic Bombing Survey group (July 1946), concluded: *“Prior to 1 November 1945, Japan would have surrendered, even if the atomic bombs had not been dropped.”*

General Dwight Eisenhower, Supreme Commander of all Allied Forces, said: *“The Japanese were ready to surrender and it wasn’t necessary to hit them with that awful thing.”*

Unnecessary and Unethical

Admiral William Leahy, the highest ranking member of the U.S. military, **Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff**, wrote: *“The use of this barbarous weapon at Hiroshima and Nagasaki was of no material assistance in our war against Japan. The Japanese were already defeated and ready to surrender because of the effective sea blockade and the successful bombing with conventional weapons... I was not taught to make war in that fashion, and wars cannot be won by destroying women and children.”*

No Military Justification

General Douglas MacArthur *“Saw no military justification for the dropping of the bomb. The war would have ended weeks earlier, if the United States had agreed, as it later did anyway, to the retention of the institution of the emperor.”* MacArthur knew that the Japanese would never renounce their emperor, and that without him an orderly transition to peace would be impossible anyhow, because his people would never submit to Allied occupation unless he ordered it. When the surrender did come, it was conditional, on the condition was a continuation of the imperial reign. Had the General’s advice been followed, the resort to atomic weapons would have been unnecessary.

War was Already Won

Under Secretary of the Navy, Ralph Bird said: *“The Japanese were ready for peace, and they already had approached the Swiss... The Japanese were becoming weaker and weaker. They were surrounded by the Navy. They couldn’t get any imports and they couldn’t export anything.”*

Opening up Asia for Communism

Deputy Director of Naval Intelligence, Ellis Zacharias wrote: *“Just when the Japanese were ready to capitulate, we went ahead and introduced to the world the most devastating weapon it had ever seen and, in effect, gave the go-ahead to Russia to swarm over Eastern Asia. It was the wrong decision. It was wrong on strategic grounds. And it was wrong on humanitarian grounds.”*

Immoral and Unnecessary

Brigadier General Carter Clarke, Military Intelligence officer, said: *“When we didn’t need to do it, and we knew we didn’t need to do it, and they knew that we knew we didn’t need to do it, we used them as an experiment for two atomic bombs. Ernest J. King, stated that the naval blockade and prior bombing of Japan in March of 1945, had rendered the Japanese helpless and the use of the atomic bomb was both unnecessary and immoral.”*

A Double Crime

Fleet Admiral Chester W. Nimitz stated that *“Japan had been defeated before the atomic bombing and Russia’s entry into the war. The Japanese had, in fact, already sued for peace before the atomic age was announced to the world with the destruction of Hiroshima and before the Russian entry into the war.’ ‘It wasn’t necessary to hit them with that awful thing... to use the atomic bomb, to kill and terrorize civilians, without even attempting negotiations, was a double crime.”*

Revulsion

General Sir Hastings Ismay, British Chief of Staff, said the Japanese wanted to get out on almost any terms short of the dethronement of the Emperor. Ismay’s reaction to the atom bombs was one of revulsion.

Why Populated Cities?

Even those who favoured use of nuclear weapons favoured using them on unpopulated areas, or Japanese military targets... not cities.

Targeting Civilians

Neither Hiroshima nor Nagasaki were deemed militarily vital by U.S. planners. Historians agree that nuclear weapons did not need to be used to stop the war or to save lives. Ex-president Herbert Hoover said: *“The Japanese were prepared to negotiate if such leads had been followed up, there would have been no occasion to drop the atomic bombs.”*

Why Then Were Atom Bombs Dropped on Japan?

If dropping nuclear bombs was unnecessary to end the war, or to save lives, why was the decision to drop them made? Especially over the objections of so many top military and political figures? One theory is that scientists like to play with their new toys. However, most of the Manhattan Project scientists, who developed the atom bomb, were opposed to using it on Japan.

Albert Einstein, said: *“A great majority of scientists were opposed to the sudden employment of the atom bomb’. In Einstein’s judgment, the dropping of the bomb was a political, diplomatic decision rather than a military or scientific decision. Indeed, some of the Manhattan Project scientists wrote directly to the Secretary of Defense in 1945 to try to dissuade him from dropping the bomb.”*

Walter Brown, Assistant to US Secretary of State declared: Truman was told by his army generals, Douglas MacArthur and Dwight Eisenhower, and his Naval Chief of Staff, William Leahy, that there was no military need to use the bomb. *“Impressing Russia was more important than ending the war in Japan.”*

General Leslie Groves, Director of the Manhattan Project that made the bomb, testified: *“There was never any illusion on my part that Russia was our enemy, and the project was conducted on that basis.”*

Serving the Cause of Communism in Asia

“Instead of allowing other options to end the war, the United States rushed to use two atomic bombs at almost exactly the time that an 8 August Soviet attack had originally been scheduled: Hiroshima on 6 August and Nagasaki on 9 August. The timing itself has obviously raised questions.”

Official Protest

On 11 August 1945, the Japanese government filed an official protest over the atomic bombing to the U.S. State Department through the Swiss Legation in Tokyo, observing: *“Combatant and non-combatant men and women, old and young, are massacred without discrimination by the atmospheric pressure of the explosion, as well as by the radiating heat which result therefrom. Consequently there is involved a bomb having the most cruel effects humanity has ever known... The bombs in question, used by the Americans, by their cruelty and by their terrorizing effects, surpass by far gas or any other arm, the use of which is prohibited. Japanese protests against U.S. desecration of international principles of war paired the use of the atomic bomb with the earlier firebombing, which massacred old people, women and children, destroying and burning down temples, churches, schools, hospitals, living quarters, etc. They now use this new bomb, having an uncontrollable and cruel effect much greater than any other arms or projectiles ever used to date. This constitutes a new crime against humanity and civilization.”*

Judicial Review

In 1963, the bombings were the subject of a judicial review. The District Court of Tokyo found, *“the attacks upon Hiroshima and Nagasaki caused such severe and indiscriminate suffering that they did violate the most basic legal principles governing the conduct of war.”*

The Hague Conventions

In the opinion of the court, the act of dropping an atomic bomb on cities was at the time governed by International Law found in the Hague Regulations on Land Warfare of 1907 and the Hague Draft Rules of Air Warfare of 1922 - 1923 and was therefore illegal.

Indiscriminate Mass Murder

Takashi Hiraoka, Mayor of Hiroshima, said in a hearing to **The Hague International Court of Justice (ICJ)**: *“It is clear that the use of nuclear weapons, which cause indiscriminate mass murder that leaves effects on survivors for decades, is a violation of international law”*. **Ichiro Itoh**, the mayor of Nagasaki, declared in the same hearing: *“It is said that the descendants of the atomic bomb survivors will have to be monitored for several generations to clarify the genetic impact, which means that the descendants will live in anxiety for [decades] to come... with their colossal power and capacity for slaughter and destruction, nuclear weapons make no distinction between combatants and non-combatants or between military installations and civilian communities... The use of nuclear weapons... therefore is a manifest infraction of international law.”*

Unnecessary Suffering and Destruction

The Hague Conventions of 1899 and 1907 set rules in place regarding the attack of civilian populations. The Hague Conventions stated that religious buildings, art and science centres, charities, hospitals, and historic monuments, were to be spared as far as possible in a bombardment, unless they were being used for military purposes. The Hague Conventions also prohibited the employment of “*arms, projectiles, or material calculated to cause unnecessary suffering*”. The definition of terrorism is “*the targeting of innocent civilians to achieve a political goal*”.

Launching the Cold War

The dropping of the atomic bombs on Japan can be seen as the first shot of the Cold War. **New Scientist** reported: “*The US decision to drop atomic bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki in 1945 was meant to kick-start the Cold War rather than end the Second World War.*”

“When you besiege a city for a long time while making war against it to take it, you shall not destroy its trees...”

Deuteronomy 20:19

Chapter 16

THE GREATEST KILLER

The 20th Century proved to be the bloodiest century in all of history. Humanism has proven to be the most destructive religion of all time. Far more people have been killed in the name of Atheism than by all other religions combined.

The Worst Century

Historian Paul Johnson has observed that *“the 20th Century state has proved itself the greatest killer of all time.”* The 20th Century has seen the worst atrocities ever committed. The word *“genocide”*, a new term coined in the 20th Century, describes what has occurred repeatedly in secular humanist states – which had first disarmed their populations.

Devaluing Life

Darwinian evolutionism, with its *“survival of the fittest”* ideology, has devalued human life. If man is not created in the image of God, and if there is no God in heaven who will judge the living and the dead, if there are no objective standards of right and wrong – then life becomes cheap. When you devalue God, you devalue life. *“You came from nothing! You are going nowhere! Life is meaningless!”*

Evolutionary Ethics

What are people according to atheists who believe in evolution? *“A hairless ape”* – Schoenberg; *“A mere insect, an ant...”* – Church; *“An accidental twig”* – Gould; *“A rope stretched over an abyss”* – Nietzsche; *“A fungus on the surface of one of the minor planets”* – Du Maurier; *“A jest, a dream, a show, bubble, air...”* – Thornbury; and *“I see no reason for attributing to man a significant difference in kind from that which belongs to a grain of sand.”* – Oliver Wendell Holmes

Atheism Undermines Justice

When atheism takes hold of a society, moral relativism is inevitable. Nothing is sacred. There is no objective standard of right and wrong, no God, no eternal Day of Judgement. No hope of eternal justice. The earth becomes cheap.

Moral Equivalence

As the existentialist writer Jean-Paul Sartre explained: *“Without God all activities are equivalent... thus it amounts to the same thing whether one gets drunk alone, or is a leader of nations.”*

The Disastrous Vacuum

Historian Paul Johnson commented on the advance on atheism in modern history: *“Nietzsche wrote in 1886: ‘The greatest event of recent times – that God is dead, that the belief in the Christian God is no longer tenable – is beginning to cast its first shadows over Europe.’ Ultimately the collapse of the religious impulse would leave a huge vacuum. The history of modern times is in great part the history of how that vacuum had been filled.”*

The Most Savage Wars

As Dr. James Kennedy in *“What If Jesus Had Never Been Born?”* observes: *“That vacuum has been filled with the totalitarian state, the loss of freedom for millions, the concentration camp and the GULAG, the rise of abortion, infanticide, euthanasia and suicide, crime out of all proportions, and the most savage wars in the history of the world.”*

Rise of Gangster Statesmen

The triumph of secular humanism with its atheism, evolutionism and situation ethics has led to the rise of gangster statesmen such as Vladimir Lenin, Joseph Stalin, Mao Tse Tung, Fidel Castro, Pol Pot, Robert Mugabe and many more like them.

The Colossal Carnage of Communism

At least 180 million people were killed by secular governments in the 20th Century. That is a very conservative estimate. We are not here talking about people who have died in wars caused by secular humanist states, because that would massively increase the body count. No, over 180 million people were killed by their own secular humanist governments in the 20th Century.

The Greatest Threat

The greatest threat to life in the 20th Century was not firearm accidents, or crime, or even wars! More people were killed by their own governments in peace time than were killed by foreign invaders in wartime.

Stalin's Gulag

Dr. David Barrett, editor of the massive *World Christian Encyclopaedia*, and author of *Cosmos, Chaos and Gospel*, and *Our Globe and How To Reach It*, documented that Soviet dictator Joseph Stalin was responsible for killing over 40 million people. Joseph Stalin closed down over 49,000 churches, and attempted the liquidation of the entire Christian Church.

Mao's Cultural Revolution

Similarly, communist dictator of China Mao Tse Tung launched the Great Proletariat Cultural Revolution, "*History's most systematic attempt ever, by a single nation, to eradicate and destroy Christianity...*" Mao was responsible for killing about 72 million people.

The Killing Fields

The communist takeover of Cambodia in 1975 resulted in the death of up to 3 million people. A full third of the total population. When we add to these the death toll of communist regimes in Korea, Vietnam, Laos, Afghanistan, Ethiopia, Angola, Mozambique, Poland, Czechoslovakia, Hungary, Cuba, and Zimbabwe, the body count is staggering.

The Fruit of Atheism

As Dostovesky so eloquently put it: "*If God is dead, then all things are possible!*"

The Horrors of a Humanist State

The terrifying thing about secular humanist states is that there is no authority above the state to which one can make an appeal. The concept of "*inalienable rights*" endowed by a Creator are of course impossible in a secular state. If the state itself is the highest authority, then there are no limits to the abuses and oppression that unrestrained human nature is capable of. The humanist state inevitably leads to tyranny and despotism.

Cataloguing the Crimes of Communism

The publication of *The Black Book of Communism* created a sensation. First published in French and later translated in to English, the Black Book is a scholarly, detailed account of the crimes of communism starting with the Bolshevik Revolution in Russia and continuing through Eastern Europe, Red China, North Korea, Vietnam, Cambodia, Ethiopia, Mozambique, Angola and Afghanistan.

Archives Compel Communists to Convert

At almost 900 pages long, the Black Book's exhaustive indictment of communism is all the more compelling because all six of its authors were once communists. They are researchers, professors and journalists associated with the Paris based Centre for the Study of History and Sociology of Communism. The editor of the *Black Book of Communism*, Stephane Courtois is also the editor of the *Communisme* magazine.

Duty of Remembrance

As the Foreword declares: "*Ten years ago, the authors of the Black Book would have refused to believe what they now write...*" However their "*exploration of the Soviet archives...*" forced them, out of a "*duty of remembrance*" to the millions of victims murdered under Marxist regimes, to "*spare a little compassion for the victims of the inhumanity so long meted out by so many of its own partisans.*" Their intention was that the Black Book serve as both history and as a memorial to those victims whose very memory had been wiped out.

The Most Violent Century of All

In his Introduction, Stephane Courtois declares: "*The fact remains that our century has outdone its predecessors in its bloodthirstiness...indeed (communism) occupies one of the most violent and most significant places of all...*"

Indictment of Communism

The **Black Book** indicts the Soviet Union's communist leaders with the following crimes (amongst many others):

- The execution (without trial) of tens of thousands of hostages and prisoners and the murder of hundreds of thousands of workers and peasants in Russia from 1918 to 1922 under Vladimir Lenin.
- Deliberately destroying all food and crops so as to starve to death 5 million people in Russia in 1922.
- The extermination of the Cossaks in 1920.
- The liquidation of 690,000 people in The Great Purge of 1937-38.
- The destruction of 4 million Ukrainians and 2 million other people in the man-made and systematically perpetrated dekulakisation famine of 1932-33, the Holodomor.

From their Own Records

The **Black Book** presents a very conservative estimate of the number of civilians murdered by Marxist regimes based on the Marxist regime's own records: 20 million in the USSR; 65 million in Red China; 1 million in Vietnam; 2 million in North Korea; 2 million in Cambodia; 1,5 million in Afghanistan, and so on. The Black Book of Communism documents that, according to the communist regimes' own archives, the total death toll is at least 100 million people killed by communist governments just between 1917 and 1991.

A Pattern of Mass Murder

"These crimes tend to fit a recognisable pattern...the pattern includes execution by...firing squads, hanging, drowning, battering, and, in certain cases, gassing, poisoning, or 'car accidents'; destruction of the population by starvation, through man-made famine, the withholding of food, or both; deportation, through which death can occur in transit (either through physical exhaustion or through confinement in an enclosed space)...or through forced labour (exhaustion, illness, hunger, cold)...Thus in the name of an ideological belief system were tens of millions of innocent victims systematically butchered."

History's Most Total Tyranny

The Foreword of The **Black Book** declares: *"Communism has been the great story of the 20th Century. Bursting into history from the most unlikely corner of Europe amid the trauma of World War I, in the wake of the cataclysm of 1939 – 1945 it make a giant leap westward...and an even greater one eastward to the China Seas. With this feat...it had come to rule a third of mankind and seemed poised to advance indefinitely. For seven decades it haunted world politics, polarising opinion between those who saw it as the socialist end of history and those who considered it as history's most total tyranny."*

The Most Colossal Political Carnage in History

With socialist fables of their *"worker's paradise"* now consigned to what Trotsky called *"the ash heap of history"*, it now has to be admitted that the secular humanist state has been *"a tragedy of planetary dimensions...the communist record offers the most colossal case of political carnage in history."*

Criminal Enterprises

As The Black Book documents, communist states did not merely commit criminal acts, *"they were criminal enterprises in their very essence, on principle, so to speak, they ruled lawlessly, by violence and without regard for human life."* What is also remarkable is that these atrocities were committed by regimes who claimed that they were building *"a worker's paradise"*, *"heaven on earth."* However, rather than delivering paradise, all communism succeeded in was creating hell on earth. *"They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves of depravity..."* 2 Peter 2:19

Just Statistics?

There is a danger that as we list the statistics and read the mind numbing numbers of the victims of secular states, we can be hardened. As Joseph Stalin observed: *"The death of one person is a tragedy, but the death of millions is just a statistic."* But we need to remind ourselves that these were real people, and whole families that were maimed, mutilated and murdered.

The Abortion Holocaust

If we were to add to the number of those victims murdered by their own government in the 20th Century the pre-born babies who have been killed by abortion, and those old and sick people killed by euthanasia, in secular states, the death toll would approach one billion people. That is 1000 million victims killed by secular states in the 20th Century alone. *"There is no one righteous, not even one; there is no one who understands, no one who seeks God. All have turned away, they have together become worthless... their throats are open graves; their tongues practice deceit. The poison of vipers is on their lips. Their mouths are full of cursing and bitterness. Their feet are swift to shed blood; ruin and misery mark their ways..."* Romans 3:10-17

The Phantom Faith of Secularism

As Dr. James Kennedy observed in *"What If Jesus Had Never Been Born?"* the 20th Century is *"one of mass murder, genocide and institutionalised terrorism, the fruits of that phantom faith in the secular state that persists in promising liberation even as it attacks the most fundamental human attachments."* *"The fool says in his heart, there is no God. They are corrupt, their deeds are vile; there is no one who does good."* Psalm 14:1

A Bitter Harvest

The bitter harvest of atheism proves that humanism is the most destructive religion in all of history. The secular state is the greatest killer ever, and secular states made the 20th Century the bloodiest century of all time.

WAS CHURCHILL REALLY THE GREATEST BRITON OF ALL TIME?

“The Greatest Briton of All Time!”

A BBC poll in 2002 declared that people in Britain consider Winston Churchill the “*greatest Briton of all time!*” He was certainly one of the most extraordinary people of the 20th century, having come under fire as a correspondent attached to the Spanish Army in Cuba during the war there, fought with the Malakand Field Force in India and Afghanistan, rode in the last cavalry charge of the empire at Omdurman, was taken prisoner in the Anglo Boer War, escaped to write best-selling books about his war experiences, became an international celebrity and entered parliament at 26-years old. At 36 he was the First Lord of the Admiralty, where he was the most powerful voice in the British Cabinet for war. Cashiered after the Dardanelles/Gallipoli disaster, Churchill spent some time at the Yper Front and then became Minister for War and Air in Lloyd George’s cabinet. He was at the centre of power for most of the first half of the 20th century and participated in all of the great decisions of Britain which affected its decline in the 20th century. Possibly the most famous of all British prime ministers, his speeches and quotes have been some of the most admired and repeated in history. However, not since fictional personages, like Zeus and Hercules, have so many myths been attached to one man. Most people today know more about the myth of Churchill than the facts behind the fantasy.

Scorched Earth in Afghanistan

Churchill’s report on his participation on the punitive expedition into Afghanistan reads like the records of a war criminal: “*We proceeded systematically, village by village and we destroyed the houses, filled up the wells, blew up the towers, cut down the great shady trees, burned the crops and broke the reservoirs in punitive devastation.*” He wrote “*All who resist will be killed without quarter.*” *Because the Pashtuns need to “recognise the superiority of our race.”* He also wrote that “*Every tribesman caught was speared, or cut down at once.*”

The Bengal Famine in India

The people of India are not particularly fond of Winston Churchill either. He wrote: “*I hate Indians. They are a beastly people with a beastly religion.*” Bengal had a better than normal harvest in 1943 and fearful that the Japanese may invade and benefit, Churchill ordered the British Army to ship tonnes of rice away from the starving people to the Middle East where it was not even needed. When the starving people of Bengal asked for food, Churchill declared that the famine was their fault for “*breeding like rabbits!*” The Viceroy of India reported “*Churchill’s attitude towards India is negligent, hostile and contemptuous.*”

A Policy of Starvation

British Secretary of State in India, Leo Emery, declared that he did not see “*much difference between Churchill’s outlook and Hitler’s!*” When Canada offered 10,000 tonnes of rice and the United States 100,000 tonnes, Churchill point blank refused to allow it. When he heard that Mahatma Gandhi was fasting in protest against British rule, he declared that he would “*rather see Gandhi trampled to death by an elephant with the viceroy riding on its back!*” Later he questioned the Viceroy: “*Why isn’t Gandhi dead yet?*” Over 4 million Indians are estimated to have died in the Bengal famine of 1943.

Invading Iran

Iranians remember that Churchill supported the joint invasion of neutral Persia by Soviet, British and American forces during 1941 to provide a supply line for Western weapons and strategic supplies to be shipped to Stalin’s Soviet Union. Later, in 1953, when Winston Churchill was prime minister, he again supported the CIA operation (*Operation Ajax*) that organised a coup against the elected government of Mohammad Mosaddegh to ensure British control of the oil fields there.

Poison Gas Bombing in Iraq

People in Iraq will remind you that when Winston Churchill was Secretary of State for the Colonies in 1921, he re-drew the map to create the present state of oil-rich Kuwait, separate from Iraq and ensured that the Kurds not rule themselves, but be divided up under Turkey, Iraq and Iran. When some Iraq tribes and Kurds objected to the signing away of their rights to rule themselves, Winston Churchill advocated the use of mustard and poison gases. As Secretary for War and Air, he advised “*the provision of some kind of asphyxiating bombs for use in preliminary operations against turbulent tribes*” in Mesopotamia (Kurdistan and Iraq).

Bomber Harris’ Praise for Churchill’s Bombing in Iraq

As Bomber Harris observed of Churchill’s bombings of civilians in Mesopotamia: “*The Arab and Kurd now know what real bombing means – within 15 minutes a full sized village can be practically wiped out and a third of its*

inhabitants killed or injured, by four or five machines which offer them no real target, no opportunity for glorious warriors, no effective means of escape!"

Reprisals in Ireland

The people of Ireland remind one that when Churchill was Minister of Home Affairs, he sent the Black and Tans to rampage across the country to carry out reprisals. He advocated the use of fighter aircraft to disperse Irish mobs with machine gun fire and bombs *"to scatter and stampede them."*

Detention without Trial and Forced Labour in Kenya

In Kenya, people will remind you that when Winston Churchill was prime minister of Britain, he declared a state of emergency in Kenya 1952 and ordered 150,000 men, woman and children, forced into concentration camps. When at a cabinet meeting in 1954, members reminded the prime minister that this course (detention without trial and forced labour) is a technical breach of the Forced Labour Convention of 1930 and the Convention on Human Rights adopted by the Council of Europe, he dismissed their objections. When Lord Mountbatten objected to the *"terrible savagery"* of his policies in Kenya, Churchill retaliated by refusing to allow Lord Mountbatten to take his wife with him on an official state visit to Turkey.

Supporting the Saudi Despot

Also, as far as Churchill's claim that there can be no compromise with dictators, he raised the British payment to Bedouin bandit Ibn Saud, who turned Saudi Arabia into a Wahhabians dictatorship, to receive a personal pay out of £100,000 a year. A stupendous sum in 1922. *"My admiration for him (Ibn Saud) was deep, because of his unfailing loyalty to us."* Evidently being a dictator is not so bad when you are loyal to British political aims. Churchill himself described Ibn Saud, as *"intolerant, well-armed and blood-thirsty!"* But as long as we are on the British side, that was good enough for Winston. In the 1940s, Churchill gifted Ibn Saud a special Rolls-Royce.

Concentration Camps and Scorched Earth in South Africa

As far as concern for human rights goes, Churchill wrote approvingly of the British concentration camp and scorched earth policy during the Second Anglo Boer War (1899-1902). *"It was great fun galloping about"* in South Africa, he wrote. Winston Churchill said of the British Concentration camps, which killed six times more Boer woman and children, than Boers who died in action, that they produced *"the minimum of suffering."*

Eugenics in England

Far from being pro-life, as Home Secretary Churchill enthusiastically supported forcibly sterilising the feeble minded and putting in labour camps, 100,000 *"degenerate"* Britons to *"halt the decline of the British race"*. He also suggested that *"tramps, beggars and wastrels"* ought to be sent to labour colonies.

Churchill's National Socialism

Although Winston Churchill made a name for himself as an opponent of socialism, both before and after the First World War with such brilliant comments as *"Socialism can only work in Heaven where they do not need it, or in hell where they already have it!"* He did put into place a severe national socialism in war-time Britain while he was prime minister (1940-1945). As the Mises Institute observed in 1950, *"It is noteworthy to remember that British socialism was not an achievement of Mr Attlee's labour government, but of the War Cabinet of Winston Churchill."* Churchill boasted that his New Liberalism offered *"a wide, comprehensive, interdependent scheme of social organisation incorporating a national series of legislative proposals and administrative acts"*. Personal freedom seems to have been the furthest thing from Churchill's mind and actual policies. It is ironic that the immense power of the British labour unions that made Britain the *"sick man of Europe"* for two generations and became the target of Margaret Thatcher, originated with the enthusiastic help of her hero, Winston Churchill.

Redrawing the Map of the Middle East

Churchill as Colonial Secretary invented two client kingdoms, Transjordan and Iraq, both artificial and unstable states. He denied the Kurds their own homeland and carved most of Iraq's oil fields into a new state called Kuwait.

Drunkard

Franklin Delano Roosevelt called Churchill *"that drunk."* As did Canadian prime minister, McKenzie. General Patton expressed shock at Churchill's intemperate indulgence during the Casablanca Conference in Morocco.

Darwinian Pagan

In a letter to his mother, Winston Churchill stated: *"I do not accept the Christian or any other form of religious belief."* Churchill was clear that he believed in the Darwinian doctrine of survival of the fittest. He quoted positively from William Ernst Henley's viciously anti-God poem *Invictus*: *"I am the master of my fate; I am the captain of my soul!"*

Most Terrifying

In his writings, Winston Churchill describes the “*most terrifying sound*” he ever heard in his life. The night after he had been captured by the Boers in the Anglo Boer War, he heard the sound of the Boers singing, Psalms! “*Worse, even than the sound of shells, the sound of Boers singing Psalms! It struck the fear of God into me. What sort of men are we fighting? They have the better cause and the cause is everything.*” (*The Boer War*, by Thomas Pakenham).

Treacherous Turn About

In January 1940, Churchill had hailed the heroism of Finland in resisting the Soviet onslaught in the Winter War, declaring: “*Everyone can see how communism rots the soul of a nation, how it makes it abject and hungry in peace and proves it base and abominable in war.*” A great speech. Very true observations. Yet, 18 months later, Churchill declared war on Finland for continuing to resist Stalin’s aggression! Vast numbers of British seamen perished and massive tonnage of British ships were sunk transporting weapons of war through the Arctic convoys to Murmansk, to bolster the Red Army in its war, amongst others, against Finland!

Public Relations Agent for Stalin

During his September 1942 trip to Moscow, where Churchill enjoyed a 19-course meal with Stalin that saw gallons of alcohol consumed, Churchill asked Stalin “*Have you forgiven me?*” Stalin smiled “*All that is in the past. It is not for me to forgive, it is for God to forgive!*” On his return Churchill rose in parliament to tell his countrymen that they were fortunate to be allied to so great a man as Joseph Stalin: “*This great rugged war chief is a man of massive outstanding personality... a man of inexhaustible courage and will power... a great man. Stalin has left me with the impression of a deep, cool wisdom and a complete absence of allusions of any kind.*” Here Churchill had plainly sold his soul to the devil.

Blatant Sickening Hypocrisy

Churchill’s concessions at Yalta were worse by far than Chamberlain’s at Munich. While the Sudeten Germans clamoured to join Germany, the Poles were terrified and horrified of Stalin’s Soviet Union. At Yalta in Feb 1945, Churchill gave moral legitimacy to Stalin’s brutal dictatorship seizing half of Europe. 100 million Christians East of the Oder River had to watch what democracy and freedom they had known before the war, disappear. They also suffered the added humiliation of seeing such words as “*free elections*”, “*sovereignty*”, “*democracy*”, “*independence*”, “*liberation. Deliberately corrupted, debased, made duplicitous, in a Declaration of Liberated Europe, the very title of which, given the ugly reality underneath, is a piece of calculated Soviet Effrontery – one, however, that both Churchill and FDR acquiesced in.*” (*Roosevelt and Stalin* by Robert Nisbet)

The Betrayal of Eastern Europe

To Churchill, the independence and freedom of 100 million Christian peoples of Eastern Europe was not worth a war with Russia in 1945. Why then had Poland been worth a war with Germany in 1939? Did Churchill ever care about Poland? His ambivalence towards it and often expressed contempt for Polish leaders and Polish people with whom Britain was allied was on public display in his *History of the Second World War*, where he described them as the “*vilest of the vile.*”

The Catastrophic Cost of War at All Costs

Was it worth bankrupting and bleeding his country and bringing down the empire for the betrayal of Eastern Europe and the bankrupting of the British Empire? Was it worth declaring war to keep 350,000 Danzigers separate from the Germany they wished to re-join?

Operation Keelhaul

Churchill had earlier described the Soviet regime as “*a vile combination of criminality and animalism.*” Yet Churchill colluded with Stalin in such monstrous crimes as the forcible return of millions of Russians, Ukrainians and other East Europeans from allied occupied territory into the hands of Stalin’s NKVD. Although the Cossacks had never been Soviet citizens and had fled the country during the Civil War of 1919-1920, even they and their children were forcibly handed over to Stalin’s bloodthirsty NKVD.

Ethnic Cleansing

Churchill also agreed to the ethnic cleansing of 15 million Germans from their ancestral homes, more than 2 million of whom would die in the brutal exodus. He agreed to hand over millions of German Prisoners of War to become slave labourers for the Soviets. Most died in Stalin’s concentration camps. He also bullied the Poles into handing more than 40% of their country over to be annexed by the Soviet Union. More Germans would die in the forced transfer of their territory to the Soviet Union at the end of the Second World War, than Armenians perished in the Turkish massacres of the First World War. The territories of East Prussia, Pomerania, East Brandenburg,

Silesia, Danzig, Memel and the Sudetenland were relentlessly and ruthlessly cleansed of Germans, whose families had inhabited those provinces for centuries. While these crimes against humanity were being perpetrated the allies at Nuremberg were self-righteously and hypocritically prosecuting German officers for so-called “*crimes against humanity*” during the war.

Using Canadians as Cannon Fodder at Dieppe

Canadians have observed that Winston Churchill was primarily responsible for the disastrous cross channel raid on the French Port of Dieppe. 6,000 Commandos, mostly Canadians, were thrown away on what was effectively a suicide mission to test German defences and to assure Stalin that Britain was doing its part to keep German divisions tied down in France to relieve the pressure on Stalin’s Red Army on the Eastern Front. Two thirds of the Canadian force were killed, wounded or captured and the RAF lost 3 aircraft to every one against the Luftwaffe. Canadians have never forgotten what one officer described “*as the bloodiest nine hours in Canadian military history*”.

Fleeced and Looted for the Cause

Churchill was a great man – at the cost of his own country’s greatness. Before Lend-Lease Aid would begin Britain was forced to sell all her commercial assets in the United States and turn all her gold over to the Americans. “*We are not only to be skinned but flayed to the bone*”, Churchill complained to his colleagues. Roosevelt was determined to milk Britain of all she was worth, to separate her from her empire and to seize the British raw materials and markets and flood them with American goods, all while being financed by British and South African gold.

Paid Agent of a Foreign Power

Winston Churchill also received millions of dollars from the Czech government to be an agent of influence in the British parliament and to bring down the Chamberlain government in the United Kingdom.

Not That Far Sighted

Ironically Winston Churchill opposed Chamberlain’s re-armourment of Britain programme and mocked his deployment of radar, voting against the very weapons and technology which would later become so invaluable in his war.

Great Depression

As Chancellor of the Exchequer 1924 to 1929, Churchill helped to bring about the economic collapse by colluding with the US Federal Reserve and Bank of England to prop up the British pound by inflating the US Dollar, which fuelled the speculative run of the 1920s, which ended in the Wall Street Crash and Great Depression of 1929.

The Sinking of the Lusitania

There had always been suspicions that when Winston Churchill was First Lord of the Admiralty he engineered the sinking of the Lusitania to bring America into the war on Britain’s side. With the Lusitania files being sealed for 60 years, it was evident that the government was hiding something colossal. As the Lusitania papers proved the ship was indeed being used to transport vast quantities of weapons and ammunition, illegally and the British and American governments both knew and conspired together to ensure that this information was known by the Germans and that the Lusitania was directed towards known positions of U-boats. Rescue efforts were also delayed to ensure that a large number of passengers perished in this incident.

Secret and Seditious Communications

As First Lord of the Admiralty in 1939-1940, Winston Churchill engaged in unprecedented bypassing of Diplomatic channels. The direct communications between President Franklin Delano Roosevelt and First Lord Churchill under frantic secrecy led to the imprisonment of Tyler Kent – America’s cypher clerk at the US embassy in London, who stumbled upon this suspicious breach of protocol.

On the War Path

Contrary to FDR’s public statements and American Law, three months prior to the war, FDR was assuring King George VI that the US Navy would sink German U-boats on sight. Churchill worked day and night to collude with FDR to bring their countries into the war.

No Peace Talks Allowed

As Prime Minister Churchill refused to allow any negotiations for peace and rejected any out of hand any and all overtures for peace, forbidding his Embassy personnel to even receive any communications from German Embassies or their representatives. It was this doggered refusal to consider any peace negotiations that doomed Europe and the British Empire to devastation and ruin and paved the way for the rise of the Soviet Union and

Red China, the debacle of decolonisation and a rise of the European Union, the United Nations and the New World Order. Just because things happen the way they did, does not mean it was inevitable or unavoidable. Other choices would have produced different results.

Unprecedented Unconditional Surrender

Churchill's demand for unconditional surrender was an unprecedented demand that greatly prolonged the war and immeasurably increased the death toll of World War Two.

Saturation Bombing of Cities

The saturation bombings campaigns which rained unprecedented death and destruction on the cities in Germany destroyed more than the rampaging hordes of Genghis Khan and Attila the Hun. His deportations of Russians and Ukrainians under *Operation Keelhaul* were amongst the greatest crimes committed in the 20th century.

Defending Britain from Imminent Invasion

Darkest Hour several times refers to the "imminent invasion" of the British Isles. This turns out to have been a Churchillian myth and propaganda statement, designed to keep the British in the fight. The war had been started ostensibly to defend Poland. However, while Poland had been invaded by both Germany from the West and the Soviet Union from the East, Britain only declared war on Germany. When the Soviet Union attacked Finland, Latvia, Lithuania and Estonia, Churchill still sought an alliance with Stalin. With the British Army defeated in Norway, Belgium and France, there was no real reason for the country to remain at war. Generous peace terms were being offered. So Churchill invented the myth of *Operation Sealion* that Germany was planning to invade Great Britain. In fact this was never seriously considered and as many historians, including Patrick Buchanan, have pointed out, Germany never even produced landing craft suitable for such an operation.

Misled by Disinformation

Most British soldiers, including my own father, who fought all 6 years of WW2 in the Royal Artillery of the 8th Army, assumed they were defending Britain. They did not know that Germany never wanted war with Britain and never even developed the weapons necessary for such an invasion. As Ian Smith declared, if they had known what the war was being fought for, they would not have fought against one another, but together against the real enemy – the communist Soviet Union.

Shocking Track Record

When one considers Churchill's personal conduct in the Afghan Campaign, the Anglo Boer War, the Disaster of the Gallipoli campaign, how Churchill orchestrated the sinking of the Lusitania, the hunger blockade of Germany, the Bengal famine in India, the saturation bombing of Germany, the assassination of General Sikorski, the betrayal of all of Eastern Europe to the hands of the Soviet NKVD, the colossal aid channelled to Stalin's Soviet Union and the ethnic cleansing of over 15 million Germans at the end of the Second World War, it appears that rather than a war hero, Winston Churchill should rather be considered a war criminal.

Disastrous Consequences are with Us to this Day

The Churchill cult and mythology has been used to justify many unjust wars, such as the war against Iraq and the present one against Syria. The deifying of Winston Churchill and his indefensible hell-bent determination to save the Soviet Union and ally with Stalin, in order to bring down Germany, precipitated the downfall of Western civilisation. Today we live with the catastrophic consequences of Churchill and FDR's disastrous policies. "***While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption...***" 2 Peter 2:19

Dr. Peter Hammond

Reformation Society
P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725
Cape Town South Africa
Tel: 021-689-4480
mission@frontline.org.za
www.ReformationSA.org

Chapter 18

DARKEST HOUR

- THE LEGEND OF WINSTON CHURCHILL

A Time of Defeat and Retreat

Darkest Hour is a British war drama focusing on Winston Churchill's first month in office as Prime Minister of Great Britain, May/June 1940. *Darkest Hour* is a suspense-filled and engrossing historic drama set against the backdrop of the German Blitzkrieg which sent the British and French armies in headlong retreat.

Peace or War - That is the Question

The near consensus of Churchill's cabinet was to begin peace negotiations with Germany. Much of the suspense and drama of this film focuses on Winston Churchill's determination to continue the war at any cost and to appeal directly to the people in the street to support his policy of "No surrender", "No negotiations", "Victory at all costs".

Spate of Churchill Films

It is remarkable that in the last two years there have been another three films on Britain in the 1940s: *Dunkirk*, *Churchill* and *Their Finest* (dealing with the British Ministry of Information assignment to produce a morale boosting film, presenting the debacle of Dunkirk as an inspiring victory).

Government Support

The film makers of *Darkest Hour* evidently received tremendous co-operation from government officials as a number of scenes are filmed in the Palace of Westminster, House of Commons, from within the underground War Room bunkers under Whitehall and even some scenes are shot within the grounds of Buckingham Palace.

Award Winning Box Office Success

Darkest Hour has done well at the box office, has been generally praised by critics and has been nominated for six academy awards in the American Oscars and the British Academy has nominated it for nine categories. Many are hailing Gary Oldman's performance as Winston Churchill as the best of his career.

Mixing Fiction with Facts

Unfortunately, despite being set in authentic venues and at a most dramatic period of history, the film makers have taken some serious liberties and introduced fictional events and fictional conversations, even from the lips of King George VI.

Censoring Out the Spiritual Realities

Even more seriously is what has been left out of the film, such as King George VI's Empire wide call for Repentance and Prayer. On 26 May 1940, with the British Expeditionary Force in defeat and retreat, the king made an international broadcast, instructing all people of the British Empire to return to God in Repentance and humbly seek God for Divine intervention to enable the rescue of their beleaguered army from total destruction. Many millions of people across the British Isles and throughout the world flocked into churches, praying in shifts for deliverance. Churches were so packed that people were lined up for hours, waiting to get in to churches to take part in the organised national repentance. These would have made impressive scenes, but inexplicably are not even referred to in *Darkest Hour*.

Impossible Breach of Protocol

The film also includes a fictional scene of the king coming into Churchill's bedroom and actually sitting on his bed to encourage him to press on with the war. Not only was such a breach of protocol unthinkable, but unnecessary, the king only needed to summon his prime minister to the palace if he wanted to talk to him. There is no hint in any historic record of such an anachronistic event taking place.

Unbelievable Anachronism

The film also takes a major detour from reality, by introducing a fictionalised event of prime minister Winston Churchill disappearing out of his vehicle in the midst of a crowd downtown in order to ride the underground in the tube and survey passengers as to their opinions regarding peace or continuing the war. Anyone who has read Churchill's biographies would immediately recognise that this is another anachronistic Hollywood type of ploy. Winston Churchill was not a democrat and he never cared for the opinions of the masses, nor even of fellow parliamentarians.

Rewriting History to Reimagine Churchill as the Stereotypical Reluctant Hero

However, *Darkest Hour* seems determined to recast British legend Winston Churchill in a more 21st century mould, the reluctant warrior, filled with self-doubts and fears, determined to do the right thing, going to the common people to hear their concerns, choosing principle over politics and championing the cause of justice. If only all that had been true!

Reality Beats Fiction

The real Winston Churchill is far removed from the myth and legend built up by a never ending stream of hagiographical films. The truth is always stranger than fiction and more interesting!

The Missing Advisors and Bankers

In *Darkest Hour*, Winston Churchill seems to be an eccentric loner. However, the reality was quite different. Nowhere does *Darkest Hour* even hint at the existence of the *Focus* group of about a dozen key politicians and bankers who continuously advised and guided Churchill on every decision. Sir Henry Strakosch, the banker who regularly bailed Churchill out from his incessant and reckless gambling debts, makes no appearance in this film. Without Strakosch and the Rothchilds we would never have even heard of Churchill because they bankrolled his incredible political career.

A Track Record of Disastrous Decisions

At the start of World War One, it had taken just ten months for Churchill's conduct as First Lord of the Admiralty to plunge him into political disgrace. In the Second World War, eight months sufficed to make him Prime Minister. It was not that his character had changed. Age had done nothing to temper his irrationalism and lend balance to his judgement. All the accusations of madcap, irresponsible schemes for disastrous action that had been made against him in 1915, could have been even more justifiably repeated in 1940.

Political Opportunism

However, he had been a prophet of doom in the political wilderness for seven years and with doom descending upon the heads of the politicians of Europe, Churchill had positioned himself for leadership, eloquent and pugnacious and as he put it, "*untainted by appeasement*". Whenever the war went badly, the Prime Minister Neville Chamberlain bore the blame and if the war went well, Churchill was likely to steal the credit.

Damage Control

The First Sea Lord, Admiral Sir Dudley Pound, fought a brilliant series of delaying actions to block Churchill's highly irresponsible projects, such as sending British warships into the Baltic Sea and invading neutral Iceland to seize control of their strategic sea ports. (Later when Prime Minister Churchill succeeded in invading Iceland.)

British Battleship Sunk at Naval Base by U-Boat

Even with the sinking of the British Battleship, HMS Royal Oak, in Scapa Flow, the chief Naval Base of Britain during the world wars, somehow the blame was attached to the Prime Minister, rather than the First Lord of the Admiralty!

Time Was on His Side

Churchill was not too disturbed at the disastrous defeats suffered by the British Army on land, he was convinced that, as with the First World War, the allies had time on their side and that no matter how many victories Germany might win on land, the Royal Navy would ultimately bring Germany to its knees through economic blockade alone.

Blockade and Bombardment

However, Winston Churchill had even more faith in the Royal Air Force's power to reduce Germany's cities to rubble and to wreck her factories by saturation aerial bombardments from the colossal 4-engine bomber fleets being produced in Britain even at this early stage of the war.

Violating Norwegian Neutrality

On 16 February 1940, Churchill ordered HMS Cossack to violate Norwegian neutrality, to capture the Altmark, a German ship taking refuge in a fjord. He then ordered the Royal Navy to mine Norwegian coastal waters to cut off Germany's iron ore supplies from Sweden shipped via Narvick and planned a bold naval action to invade neutral Norway. In this the French eagerly joined in.

Disastrous Debacle

Unwise bragging by Churchill of this upcoming seaborne operation tipped off the German Abwehr and as the Anglo French Naval invasion force approached Norway, they found themselves out-manoeuvred and pre-empted by Operation *Weserübung* with seaborne landings and *Fallschirmjäger* (Para troop) assaults. Churchill had disastrously underestimated his enemy and the Royal Navy lost an aircraft carrier, 2 battle cruisers, 7 destroyers, a submarine and 112 aircraft with over 6,000 casualties. The French also lost 2 destroyers and 2 submarines in this failed Allied invasion of Norway. This was the immediate context behind the opening scene of the *Darkest Hour* film.

Bringing Down Chamberlain's Government

As Churchill himself admitted, his optimism had led him to ignore the difficulties and drawbacks and he had fatally underestimated his enemy. He wrote: "*Considering the prominent part I played in these events... it is a marvel that I survived and maintained my position in public esteem and parliamentary confidence.*" Ironically, it was Prime Minister Neville Chamberlain who paid the price of Churchill's failure. The Norwegian debacle forced Neville Chamberlain to resign.

The Crisis that Brought Churchill to Power

To restore confidence and unify the nation for war there would need to be a coalition government, but the Labour party refused to serve under Chamberlain. Lord Halifax, the Foreign Secretary, was the first choice of the king and was acceptable to all parties. However, Halifax declined the premiership on the grounds that the war should not be run from the House of Lords. The only other candidate willing to undertake the Prime Ministership in this time of defeat and retreat, was the very man, Winston Churchill, who had been most responsible for the debacle that was bringing down the government!

Irony

At 6pm on 10 May 1940, Winston Churchill was summoned to Buckingham Palace and instructed by the King to form a government. Virtually everyone in government distrusted or disliked Winston Churchill and there was general shock and depression at the news. However, his reputation as a prophet of doom had made him the natural choice when doom descended. Even though he was the primary architect of the disasters besetting the country at that time.

Sense of Destiny

Although many people in the country had great doubts about Churchill's ability, he apparently had none. Churchill's memoirs record: "*As I went to bed at around 3am, I was conscious of a profound sense of relief. At last I had the authority to give directions over the whole scene. I felt as if I were walking with destiny and all my past life had been but a preparation for this hour.*"

Military Realities

On the very day that Chamberlain resigned and Winston Churchill was appointed Prime Minister, the German army launched its *Blitzkrieg* on the allied armies on the Western Front. The impression given in the *Darkest Hour* film is that the German army was the largest army in the world and greatly outnumbered all others. That is not actually true. The largest army in the world was most certainly the Red Army of the Soviet Union, but the French Army was also much larger than the German Army. Together the British Expedition Force and French Army greatly outnumbered the German forces with twice as much artillery and almost twice as much tanks and armoured cars.

Blitzkrieg

However, clearly the Germans made better tactical use of their limited resources. German casualties in the six-week *Blitzkrieg* that defeated France were 27,074 dead, 111,034 wounded, total German casualties were under 160,000. Allied casualties were 2,260,000. The Germans destroyed twice as many Allied aircraft as they lost and more than five times as many Allied tanks as they lost. Plainly the German army proved itself superior in quality, even though the Allies had the advantage in terms of quantity. Before the Battle of France in 1940, France would have been considered the military superpower of Europe, so the swift and decisive defeat of France stunned the world.

The Shocking Facts

Sir Max Hastings, Author of *The Secret War: Spies, Codes and Guerrillas 1939-45*, states in his conclusion that Allied commanders routinely complained that British Intelligence greatly underestimated the numbers of German soldiers and their resources, but time proved that in fact the intelligence departments were infallibly

accurate due to the Government Code and Cypher School (GC&CS) cracking the German Enigma codes early in the war. They provided a complete intelligence picture of all German dispositions and war plans throughout the war. The decrypts and analysis of enemy strength were accurate. However, as Hastings observed, the incredible tenacity and fighting spirit of the German forces made them worth many times their number of Allied forces.

Blood, Toil, Tears and Sweat

Darkest Hour highlights Winston Churchill's extraordinary eloquence and showcases some of his most famous war time speeches. In his first address to the House of Commons as Prime Minister on 13 May, "I have nothing to offer but blood, toil, tears and sweat... you ask, what is our policy? I will say, it is **to wage war!** By sea, land and air! With all our might and with all the strength that God can give us; to wage war against the monstrous tyranny, never surpassed in the dark, lamentable catalogue of human crime... you ask, what is our aim? I can answer in one word: **Victory, victory at all costs, victory in spite of all terror; victory however long and hard the road may be!**"

Marshalling the English Language for War

As an observer noted, Winston Churchill marshalled the English language and sent it into war. Certainly his policy of war **at all costs**, meant an extremely long and hard ruinous road for the people of England, Europe and indeed the whole British Commonwealth.

Was it Really Necessary?

But the film *Darkest Hour* does raise the question: Was it necessary? Could Britain have chosen the road of peace and negotiation? That indeed is the whole premise of Patrick Buchanan's book, [*Churchill, Hitler and the Unnecessary War – How Britain Lost its Empire and the West Lost the World*](#).

The Peace Option

As *Darkest Hour* depicts, most of the Cabinet, including Neville Chamberlain and Lord Halifax, favoured a negotiated settlement and indeed Germany repeatedly offered most generous terms. That is certainly what President Herbert Hoover in his *Freedom Betrayed* book documents. These authorities are convinced that Britain could have continued to be the greatest political, economic and military superpower in the world through to the end of the 20th century and beyond, had Churchill not been hell-bent on a policy of war "at any price, in spite of all terror, however long and hard the road may be."

Peace Initiatives which were Spurned

Peter Padfield makes the same point in his *Hess, Hitler and Churchill: The Real Turning Point of the Second World War – A Secret History* book. When Deputy Fuhrer Rudolph Hess set off for Britain on his peace mission in May 1941, it was the most dramatic of 16 major peace initiatives launched by Germany to end the war in the West. As made clear in multiple other offers through 1940-41, through neutral countries, such as Sweden and Switzerland, the German leadership was committed to evacuating all occupied European countries in the West in exchange for an ending of the British naval blockade and aerial bombardment of Germany.

What Could One Lose by Accepting Those Peace Offers?

What would Britain have to lose from accepting such an offer? Absolutely nothing. There was so much to gain and without any need for further loss of life.

Crushing All Who Proposed Peace

However, Winston Churchill had everyone connected with the peace initiatives in Great Britain, including generals, admirals, members of parliament and Lords, arrested and incarcerated, without charge and without trial, under emergency security legislation. Over 6,000 people were detained without trial under the Emergency Powers Act of 22 May 1940.

Crushing Dissent and Imprisoning Dissenters

Under Winston Churchill, literally thousands of advocates for peace in Britain were imprisoned. All conscientious objectors on staff at the BBC were dismissed. Even members of parliament were detained for years, without charge or trial, under Churchill's Emergency powers.

Rudolf Hess

Hess, who, as an unarmed peace emissary, should have been treated like an ambassador, was however, the last prisoner incarcerated in the Tower of London. Hess was completely muzzled, never allowed to speak to anyone concerning the war, or his peace initiative, for the rest of his life. Considering that he was the last surviving senior leader of the Third Reich, it is extraordinary that neither historians, nor journalists, were allowed any access to interview Hess, for decades, right up to his death under suspicious circumstances in 1987.

Who Gains from This War?

Peter Padfield makes clear in his book, *Hess, Hitler and Churchill*, the British people had everything to gain and nothing to lose from entering into such an agreement. Indeed many millions of lives would have been spared and much of the architectural and art treasures of Europe could have escaped arial destruction by bomber command. In fact, no soldiers needed to have died on the beaches of Normandy, or in the Battle for Arnhem, or indeed any of the battles from the Dieppe raid, onwards to the terror bombing campaigns that incinerated over 60 cities including Hamburg, Cologne, Dresden and Berlin. One person would have lost and that is Winston Churchill. He saw the war as his path to power and greatness. Ending the war early was against his personal ambitions. The only other “winner” or beneficiary of the disastrous World War was international communism, particularly Stalin’s Soviet Union.

War Lord

Even admirers and biographers of Winston Churchill acknowledge that he was more of a War Dictator than a Prime Minister. Never has any British prime minister consolidated more power and exercised it with greater influence than Winston Churchill did from 1940 to 1945. He even made himself Minister of Defence. As Minister of Defence he often bypassed the Chiefs of Staff and the War Cabinet secretariat by issuing personal instructions directly to squadron leaders and commanders in the field. Including ordering a series of “*savage attacks*” on the German capital, Berlin, in September 1941. When warned that such attacks would inevitably lead to counter bombing of London in reprisal, Churchill insisted the bombing go ahead.

War State

Churchill was in some ways, something of a Revolutionary. Formal hierarchies and normal procedures were no longer sacred in his administration. Anything that advanced the war effort was “*good*”. Anything that stood in its way was steamrolled or swept aside. Financial orthodoxy was thrown out the window. Britain went for broke. Limits on working hours in factories were ignored in the race for arms production.

Total War

While Germany never allowed mothers to be mobilised into the factories in the Second World War, Winston Churchill had no such compunctions and moved the country into a Total War-footing immediately, with 24 hours a day, 7 days a week, factory production and absolutely nothing was held back. However, Germany, by way of comparison, only moved on to such a Total War-footing as late as 1943, when it was actually too late. As Air Marshall Arthur Tedder of the Royal Air Force observed, Germany lost the war because she failed to wage Total War.

Women at War

Mothers in Germany were excluded from factory work. Albert Speer, Reich Minister of Armaments and War Production, complained about the exclusion of millions of mothers from his work force, but was overruled by Adolf Hitler, who insisted that the primary duty of mothers was to be raising the children in the home. Churchill had no problem drafting women into war work by the Ministry of Labour and even using women in combat in anti-aircraft units and in the Special Operations Executive (SOE), which used many women in highly dangerous roles as secret agents, as Churchill put it, to “*set Europe ablaze*.”

Dictatorial National Socialism in Britain

After passage of the *Emergency Powers Act of 22 May*, Churchill had the legal power to do almost anything he liked with the citizens of Britain, or their property. As has been observed, Winston Churchill practised a national socialism in Great Britain in many cases more severe than that practised in war-time Germany.

Total Control of the Media

In those desperate days, Churchill dominated the radio and newspapers of Great Britain with calculated political acts and carefully prepared and rehearsed speeches designed to boost morale, denigrate defeatism and secure maximum work effort from farm labourers, factory workers and soldiers alike.

History in the Making

His speeches were also intended to resound through the ages as Churchill noted that he never forgot that he was an actor on the great stage of history. He commented that history would be kind to him because he intended to write it!

Surprising Success of Churchill’s Oratory

Professional broadcasters expressed their surprise at the success of Churchill’s speeches. Churchill’s style of oratory was at least 20 years out of date and considered most unsuitable for the intimacy of radio. They noted that he addressed not the real British people with their skepticism and materialism, but he addressed a heroic

people of his own imagination, the living embodiment of great historic tradition. Churchill drew on the broad sweep of English history, recalling the Battles of Agincourt and Trafalgar, which actually meant little or nothing to most of his listeners. Yet he succeeded in evoking a pride in imperial glory and national destiny that for most British people had died long before, if it had even existed at all! Yet, Churchill's speeches worked, despite their archaic language, the occasional colloquialism amidst high flowing phrases and flashes of cheeky humour delivered with a strangely compelling voice. Churchill's speeches were resonant with high emotion, quite unusual for the British people at that time.

Effective Dramatic Simplicity

Churchill demonstrated an effective dramatic simplicity in his brilliant speeches, such as after the desperate evacuation of the British Expedition Force from the beaches of Dunkirk: *"We shall fight in France, we shall fight on the seas and oceans, we shall fight with growing confidence and strength in the air; we shall defend our island, whatever the cost may be, we shall fight on the beaches, we shall fight on the landing grounds, we shall fight in the fields and in the streets, we shall fight in the hills; we shall never surrender!"*

Was it Even Necessary to Wage War at All?

Churchill's impressive speech making abilities may have clouded a more pertinent question: Was it even necessary to fight this war at all?

Facts that Undermine the Fiction

Germany had never declared war on Britain. Germany never wanted to fight Britain. Germany was offering the most generous peace terms imaginable for a victorious army. Why could Britain not just go her way and end the naval blockade and aerial bombardment of Germany? What was to be gained? Indeed what was gained?

Their Finest Hour

After the dramatic and complete military defeat of France within a mere six weeks, Churchill demonstrated again his inspired journalist knack of coining an unforgettable phrase: *"The battle of France is over. I expect that the battle of Britain is about to begin... let us therefore brace ourselves to our duty and so bear ourselves that, if the British Empire and its Commonwealth last for a thousand years, men will still say, **this was their finest hour!**"*

Was WW2 Really Britain's Finest Hour?

Great words, inspiring. However, was it even true? In what way can one claim that one's own times are the finest hour for an empire over many centuries? Many historians may say that Britain's 19th century naval campaign against the slave trade, clearing the oceans of slave ships and setting countless captives free, was their finest hour. Indeed there are many more worthy contenders for the title: *"Their finest hour"*.

Memorable Exaggeration and Presumption

After the Battle of Britain there was the famous tribute to the gallant pilots of Fighter Command: *"Never in the field of human conflict was so much owed by so many, to so few."* Memorable, inspiring and unforgettable. However, again, surely gross presumption and exaggeration.

Thermopylae and the 300 Spartans

Would not those words have been more appropriately attributed to King Leonidas and his 300 Spartans? The Battle of Thermopylae 480BC, where an initial Greek force of 7,000 blocked the path of the Persian Army claimed to number over a million for 7 days. When their position was outflanked, King Leonidas dismissed the bulk of the Greek Army and remained to safeguard their retreat with 300 Spartans, 700 Thespians and 400 Thebans, who all fought to the last man. This bold and sacrificial delaying action enabled the Greek Navy to withdraw to Salamis, where they later won a great victory against the Persian Navy and effectively saved Europe from Asiatic control.

Malta, Lepanto and Vienna

Similarly one could recount the courageous siege of Malta where a few hundred knights of St. John held out against a vast Turkish Army in a siege of almost 4 months, helping to save Western Europe from invasion. The decisive naval battle of Lepanto in 1571 and the successful raising of the siege of Vienna of 1683, are surely far more worthy recipients of such an accolade: *"Never in the field of human conflict was so much owed by so many, to so few."*

War Propaganda

However, Churchill's speeches were backed up by impressive press photos, rousing news reels and strategic personal appearances - all designed to promote war-propaganda and further mobilise the nation and the empire in a war *at all costs, to the very end.*

Self-Indulgent Decadence

It was extraordinary that Winston Churchill came to be so popular with the common people as he was probably the most ostentatiously self-indulgent leader who has ever been appointed to 10 Downing Street. He woke at around 8am to be served a copious breakfast with despatch boxes of telegrams and memorandums. He stayed in bed for most of the morning, dictating to his secretaries. His first bath of the day followed (he generally had two baths each day and changed his shirt three times a day). Each of the three meals a day were by all estimations, massive and included brandy and cigars. Churchill frequently embarrassed officials by appearing like a Roman Emperor in his bath towel, dripping from the bathroom, at all hours of the day. Daily, his secretaries had to take dictation from him while he luxuriated in the bath.

Obnoxious Rudeness and Bullying

He was described by those who worked for him as “*rude, overbearing, loquacious, moody, insulting and arbitrary.*” His long-suffering wife, Clementine, warned him: “*There is a danger of you being generally disliked by your colleagues and subordinates because of your rough, sarcastic and overbearing manner.*”

Explosive Temper

Desmond Morton, his long-trusted advisor, expressed horror at the “*depth of selfish brutality*” revealed in Churchill’s sudden rages against those who crossed him. His egotism and irascible temper were legendary and was mentioned in the diaries of many generals, including George Patton. Churchill’s intake of alcohol was continuous throughout the day. His comment: “*I have taken more out of alcohol, than alcohol has taken out of me!*”

Harassment and Intimidation

Churchill harried his subordinates with a never ending stream of queries and instructions which could seriously disrupt the vital work of whole ministries by his sudden importunate demands for information and action. Some officials later recorded that they felt they were fighting a war more against Churchill than Hitler! The Navy in particular was continuously trying to prevent Churchill’s dream of a successful re-run of the disastrous Gallipoli Campaign of 1915. As Minister of Defence, Churchill summed up his method in one witty phrase: “*All I want is compliance with my wishes.*”

Micro-Management

Churchill could simultaneously direct grand international political and military strategy and intervene to determine the size of jam rations, or demand an increase in the output of playing cards for gambling!

Ultra Secret Decrypts

Churchill insisted on being given a selection of ultra-secret decrypts every day. These were often delivered by the Head of Mi6, Sir Stewart Menzies, in person. Menzies tried to make sure that there was at least one juicy scandalous item a day to suit the prime minister’s palate. Churchill loved to spring secret information on the uninitiated to clinch an argument, thus triumphing in debate from an unassailable position of strength – as it was a breach of national security to query the source of his intelligence!

Blockade, Bomb and Sabotage

Churchill’s military strategy was summed up in two words: Blockade and Bombing, to which he later added Sabotage. This was then rearranged into a three S’s: Strategic Bombing, Sabotage and Subversion. Within just five days of becoming Prime Minister, he had already ordered Bomber Command to raid the industrial areas of the Ruhr in Germany. He diverted a high proportion of Britain’s limited resources to the strategic bombing of Germany. He was not at all put off by the fact that the bombing offensives of 1940 to 1941 were a series of fiascos. The night attacks were costly and inaccurate, had no effect on German war production and killed more British flyers than even German civilians! When the French government surrendered Churchill showed his ruthlessness by ordering the sinking of the French fleet at Oran and seizing of all French ships in British waters.

Believing His Own Propaganda

Churchill continually sought to convince himself and those around him of the success of his strategies and of the truth of his own speeches. However, the generals and admirals around him were well aware that, contrary to his broadcasts and speeches, Britain was not winning, the German people were not demoralised, nor was the German economy anywhere near a breaking point, it was not even on a full war footing yet!

No Survival without Victory?

Darkest Hour showcases some of the great speeches of Winston Churchill, including: “***Without victory there can be no survival!***” which makes rousing patriotic speech, but is it true? There are many countries that have

experienced defeat in war that have survived, even thrived. As Rev. Bill Bathman pointed out in his book, [Going Through](#), when he first arrived as a missionary in Europe in 1951, Britain was economically depressed and looked like they had lost the war, whereas Germany, despite having been savagely bombed by almost non-stop thousand bomber raids, which turned their cities into rubble, Germany in the 1950s looked like they had been the victors of the Second World War. The phenomenal work ethic of the Germans rebuilt their country faster and better than Britain. France was defeated by Germany in 1871 and 1940 and survived much better than they did with their apparent victory in the First World War. French deaths from the First World War exceeded 1.3 million. French deaths in the Second World War were under 100,000, at least from the German Army. More than that were killed by Allied bombardments in the Liberation. Even Poland which suffered more than most countries in the Second World War and was decisively defeated both by the Germans and the Russians, survives and in fact thrives as one of the freest nations in Europe today. As my own father, who fought all six years of the Second World War in the Royal Artillery declared: *"If we could have seen what would happen to Britain after the war, we would not have fought against one another, but together against the real enemy!"*

Was it Worth the Cost?

As *Darkest Hour* so dramatically demonstrates, Winston Churchill used rhetoric to harden public opinion against a peaceful resolution. He really did marshal the English language and send it off to war! But was it worth it?

Why Was Negotiation so Unthinkable?

One of the most intense scenes in *Darkest Hour* is where Winston Churchill bellows at his War Cabinet: ***"You cannot reason with a tiger when your head is in its mouth!"*** Again, a great turn of phrase, but in what sense was it true? The vast British Empire was by no means in a tiger's mouth. As the English Channel had stopped Napoleon's forces 150 years before, so it would prove an insurmountable obstacle to Hitler's panzers. As Patrick Buchanan points out in his *Churchill, Hitler and the Unnecessary War* book, Germany never had an aircraft carrier, nor produced landing craft or four-engine bombers. It was evident by the very weapons of the Wehrmacht, Kriegsmarine and Luftwaffe that world domination was never their aim, only domination on the European continent.

World Domination

World domination is what Britain, France, the United States and Japan had with their massive empires, predominance of aircraft carriers and huge naval fleets. If Germany wanted world domination, then it would have helped them to demand the surrender of France's Naval Fleet. France's Navy was more than 4-times the size of Germany's Kriegsmarine. However, despite the Allies having demanded the German High Seas Fleet and Merchant Marine at the end of the First World War, Germany never demanded France's Fleet, even after their decisive six-week *Blitzkrieg* victory over France.

We Cannot Compromise with Dictators

Winston Churchill famously declared time and again that it was impossible to compromise with dictators! A fine sentiment, except that he has once been a great admirer of II Duce, Mussolini, the dictator of Italy. Churchill praised Mussolini on 20 January 1927: *"I could not help being charmed by Senior Mussolini's gentle and simple bearing and by his calm, detached poise, in spite of so many burdens and dangers."*

Supporting Mussolini's Fascism in Italy

On Mussolini, Churchill extolled *"If I were Italian, I am sure I would have been with you entirely from the beginning!"* *"What a man! I have lost my heart! Fascism has rendered a service to the entire world!"*

Fictional Stereotypes

A lot of war time lies and victors propaganda have now been scripted into official history. In *Darkest Hour*, a fictionalised consultation with commoners on an underground train in the tube and a stereotyped cultured black Briton quoting classic poetry is injected to give the impression that Winston Churchill actually cared about what common people thought. Not only did such an episode not happen, but Winston Churchill would not have cared what they said anyway.

Arrogant and Selfish

As many observed, Winston Churchill only came to parliament to make speeches, never to listen to what anyone else had to say. Prime Minister Baldwin declared of Winston Churchill, *"We delight to listen to him in the house, but we do not take his advice."* Baldwin observed that Winston had imagination, eloquence, industry and ability, but no judgment.

Unfailing Bad Judgement

Winston Churchill's public track record is one long litany of catastrophe. Amongst others, he supported King Edward VIII in his determination to marry the twice divorced Mrs Simpson and his public speech urging Edward to hold onto the throne, despite the constitutional crisis on 7 December 1936 while *"filled with emotion and brandy"* was shouted down by the rest of the House.

Bankrupting Britain and Betraying Eastern Europe

Yet, Churchill is acclaimed as the man of destiny who inspired Britain to keep fighting until the United States came to the rescue. The pertinent question was: Was that a wise and necessary move? In what way did Britain, or Europe, benefit from bankrupting Britain, devastating Europe, saving the Soviet Union from certain collapse during *Operation Barbarossa* with the Herculean Lend-Lease programme and betraying Eastern Europe behind the Iron Curtain in 1945? Or, betraying 3 million Russians, Ukrainians and other Eastern Europeans in *Operation Keelhaul* – forcing them across the border into hands of Stalin's waiting murderous NKVD.

Choosing an Ally Determined to Dismantle the British Empire

As Patrick Buchanan points out, Churchill chose as his enemy Hitler, who wanted the British Empire to survive and endure and chose as his ally, Franklin Delano Roosevelt, who was determined to dismantle the British Empire! As Captain Grenfell observed *"What an extraordinary paradox that Britain's principle enemy was anxious for the British Empire to remain in being while the principle ally, the United States, was determined to destroy it!"* Few today could say that Britain and the world is a better place now than it was in 1939.

Hell Bent

Asked how he could ally with Stalin, whose crimes he knew so well, Churchill answered that he had only one single purpose – *"the destruction of Hitler and my life is much simplified thereby. If Hitler invaded hell, I would at least made a favourable reference to the devil!"* At Tehran, 1943, Churchill presented Soviet dictator, Joseph Stalin with a crusader sword! As though this communist persecutor of the Church was a defender of Christian civilisation!

Counting the Cost

When Churchill made his speech of victory at all costs, did he seriously consider that the cost could be the death of the empire and indeed of Christian Europe itself? For the war to continue for five more years after Dunkirk, the financial, strategic and moral costs mounted astronomically.

Violation of Solemn Promises and Principles

After Churchill returned from Yalta, Member of Parliament, John Rhys Davies, rose in the House of Commons, 1 March 1945, to declare: *"We started this war with great motives and high ideas. We published the Atlantic charter and then spat on it, stomped on it and burned it, as it were, at the stake and now nothing is left of it."*

History's Most Terrifying Peace

As Time Magazine observed at the time: *"Europe has emerged from history's most terrible war into history's most terrifying peace!"*

Factual Errors

At the end of *Darkest Hour*, the End Credits falsely claim that the 300,000 British soldiers evacuated from Dunkirk were transported by *"Churchill's civilian ships"*. Actually 95% of the soldiers were evacuated by the Royal Navy and only 5% by civilian ships.

Barking up the Wrong Tree

The posters advertising *Darkest Hour* has the theme: **"Never Give Up! Never Give In!"** That is all very well, but what if you are wrong? Persisting down the wrong path is not wise but foolish. Who declared war on whom? Who started the war? Who started arial bombardments of cities?

Not That Far Sighted

Ironically Winston Churchill opposed Chamberlain's re-armourment of Britain programme and mocked his deployment of radar, voting against the very weapons and technology which would later become so invaluable in his war.

Unprecedented Unconditional Surrender

Churchill's demand for unconditional surrender was an unprecedented demand that greatly prolonged the war and immeasurably increased the death toll of World War Two.

Saturation Bombing of Cities

The saturation bombings campaigns which rained unprecedented death and destruction on the cities in Germany destroyed more than the rampaging hordes of Genghis Khan and Attila the Hun. His deportations of Russians and Ukrainians under *Operation Keelhaul* were amongst the greatest crimes committed in the 20th century.

Defending Britain from Imminent Invasion

Darkest Hour several times refers to the “*imminent invasion*” of the British Isles. This turns out to have been a Churchillian myth and propaganda statement, designed to keep the British in the fight. The war had been started ostensibly to defend Poland. However, while Poland had been invaded by both Germany from the West and the Soviet Union from the East, Britain only declared war on Germany. When the Soviet Union attacked Finland, Latvia, Lithuania and Estonia, Churchill still sought an alliance with Stalin. With the British Army defeated in Norway, Belgium and France, there was no real reason for the country to remain at war. Generous peace terms were being offered. So Churchill invented the myth of *Operation Sealion* that Germany was planning to invade Great Britain. In fact this was never seriously considered and as many historians, including Patrick Buchanan, have pointed out, Germany never even produced landing craft suitable for such an operation.

Misled by Disinformation

Most British soldiers, including my own father, who fought all 6 years of WW2 in the Royal Artillery in the 8th Army, assumed they were defending Britain. They did not know that Germany never wanted war with Britain and never even developed the weapons necessary for such an invasion. As Ian Smith declared, if they had known what the war was being fought for, they would not have fought against one another, but together against the real enemy – the communist Soviet Union.

Shocking Track Record

When one considers Churchill’s personal conduct in the Afghan Campaign, the Anglo Boer War, the Disaster of the Gallipoli campaign, how Churchill orchestrated the sinking of the Lusitania, the hunger blockade of Germany, the Bengal famine in India, the saturation bombing of Germany, the assassination of General Sikorski, the betrayal of all of Eastern Europe to the hands of the Soviet NKVD, the colossal aid channelled to Stalin’s Soviet Union and the ethnic cleansing of over 15 million Germans at the end of the Second World War, it appears that rather than a war hero, Winston Churchill should rather be considered a war criminal.

Disastrous Consequences are with Us to this Day

The Churchill cult and mythology has been used to justify many unjust wars, such as the war against Iraq and the present one against Syria. The deifying of Winston Churchill and his indefensible hell-bent determination to save the Soviet Union and ally with Stalin, in order to bring down Germany, precipitated the downfall of Western civilisation. Today we live with the catastrophic consequences of Churchill and FDR’s disastrous policies. “*While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption...*” 2 Peter 2:19

Dr. Peter Hammond

Reformation Society
P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725
Cape Town South Africa
Tel: 021-689-4480
mission@frontline.org.za
www.ReformationSA.org

Chapter 19

THE TRUTH ABOUT “MARTIN LUTHER KING, JR.”

“And you shall know the truth and the truth shall make you free.” John 8:32

Discernment

It is absolutely essential that we know the truth of history in order to recognise the lies of propaganda and indoctrination. We need to study the Word of God so we can be freed from the deceptions of the world.

Deceiving the Nations

In the Book of Revelation, we read: *“Then I saw an angel coming down from Heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. He laid hold of the dragon, that serpent of old who is the devil and satan and bound him for one thousand years and he cast him into the bottomless pit and shut him up and set a seal on him, so that he should deceive the nations no more...”* Revelation 20:1-3. *“And war broke out in Heaven... that serpent of old, called the devil and satan, who deceives the whole world...”* Revelation 12:7. Satan is plainly deceiving the nations.

Indoctrination

Education teaches you **how** to think. Indoctrination teaches you **what** to think. The ability to think critically is becoming less and less common. We are being subjected to the greatest flood of misinformation and disinformation in the history of mankind.

Misinformation

Misinformation is error, either as a result of sincere mistakes, or typographical errors. Frequently trusting in unreliable sources results in misunderstanding the facts of a matter.

Disinformation

Disinformation is the intentional distortion of events, or issues. While misinformation is unintentional, disinformation is intentional. Communist governments established Departments of Disinformation to manufacture deceit and to confuse issues.

Truth

God is Truth. God’s Word is Truth. Jesus Christ is the Way, the Truth and the Life. Under the Duties Required in the Ninth Commandment, the Westminster Larger Catechism lists: The duty of preserving and promoting Truth. The duty to stand for the truth and to do so from the heart. The duty to speak the truth and only the truth in matters of judgment and justice. The duty to speak the truth at all times. The duty to study and practice everything true, noble, lovely and of good report.

Deception

Under Sins Forbidden in the Ninth Commandment, the Westminster Standards include: The sin of giving false evidence. The sin of lying. The sin of concealing the truth. The sin of misconstruing intentions. The sin of exaggerating minor faults. The sin of perverting the truth to a wrong meaning.

You are Being Lied To

The Scripture teaches us that satan is deceiving the nations. If we find ourselves in full agreement with Hollywood and the United Nations, we need to stop and carefully consider where we have been deceived. If you agree with the world on the major issues, then satan has deceived you.

Propaganda

Propaganda, the calculated manipulation of public opinion to serve political and ideological interests is pervasive. Propaganda aims to do other peoples thinking for them. Propaganda today has moved into prop-agenda, not only controlling **what we think**, but **how we think**, and **what we think about**.

Twisting History

As Karl Marx declared: *“The first battlefield is the re-writing of history.”*

Delusion

On almost any given day, you will be confronted with deception. The news media and entertainment industry use deceit as their stock and trade. One example of how Christians have bought into propaganda, is how many quote, with respect and even reverence, sayings attributed to *“Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr.”*

Respected Authority

In recent months, I have received numerous communications from friends and respected colleagues, circulating quotes that were reported to have come from Martin Luther King. Key speakers at a Christian University

graduation service repeatedly and profusely quoted from Martin Luther King. At a recent Ministers Conference, an overseas guest speaker quoted most positively from Martin Luther King.

Hijacking History

When I am speaking through an interpreter almost anywhere in Africa, when I mentioned the great German Reformer, Dr. Martin Luther, inevitably the translator will say: “*Dr. Martin Luther King!*” Many people, who are ignorant of the writings and teachings of the great Reformer who launched the Protestant Reformation, almost 500 years ago, quote regularly (and actually often erroneously), from “*Martin Luther King, Jr.*” At many of our camps and courses, and during surveys on outreaches in shopping malls, we find people listing Martin Luther King, Jr. as one of the greatest people who has ever lived, and as a leader that they greatly respect.

Researching the Facts

This led me to undertake some research to find out what are the facts behind this modern idol. This is what I found:

American Idol

Every January, the media go into a kind of frenzy of adulation for the so-called “*Rev. Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr.*” King even has a national holiday declared in his honour, an honour accorded to no other American - not George Washington, not Thomas Jefferson, not even Abraham Lincoln. (Washington and Lincoln no longer have holidays - they share the generic-sounding “*Presidents’ Day.*”)

Sealed Files

A liberal judge has sealed the FBI files on King until the year 2027. What are they hiding? Let us take a look at this modern-day idol.

Michael King

Born in 1929, King was the son of a Black preacher known at the time only as “*Daddy King.*” “*Daddy King*” named his son Michael. In 1935, “*Daddy King*” had an inspiration to name himself after the great Protestant Reformer Dr. Martin Luther. He declared to his congregation that henceforth they were to refer to him as “*Martin Luther King*” and to his son as “*Martin Luther King, Jr.*” None of this name changing was ever legalized in court. “*Daddy King’s*” son’s real name is to this day Michael King.

A Pattern of Plagiarism

We read in Michael Hoffman’s *Holiday for a Cheater*:

According to the testimony of King’s best friend of that time, Reverend Larry H. Williams, the first public sermon that King ever gave in 1947, at the Ebenezer Baptist Church, was plagiarised from a homily by Protestant clergyman Harry Emerson Fosdick, entitled *Life is What You Make It*.

The first book that King wrote, *Stride Toward Freedom*, was plagiarised from numerous sources, all unattributed, according to documentation recently assembled by sympathetic King scholars Keith D. Miller, Ira G. Zepp, Jr., and David J. Garrow.

No less an authoritative source than the four senior editors of *The Papers of Martin Luther King, Jr.* (an official publication of the Martin Luther King Centre for Nonviolent Social Change, Inc., whose staff includes King’s widow, Coretta), stated of King’s writings at both Boston University and Crozer Theological Seminary: “*Judged retroactively by the standards of academic scholarship, (his writings) are tragically flawed by numerous instances of plagiarism... Appropriated passages are particularly evident in his writings in his major field of graduate study, Systematic Theology.*”

King’s essay, *The Place of Reason and Experience in Finding God*, written at Crozer, pirated passages from the work of Theologian Edgar S. Brightman, author of *The Finding of God*.

Another of King’s theses, *Contemporary Continental Theology*, written shortly after he entered Boston University, was largely stolen from a book by Walter Marshall Horton.

King’s doctoral dissertation, *A Comparison of the Conceptions of God in the Thinking of Paul Tillich and Harry Nelson Wieman*, for which he was awarded a PhD in Theology, contains more than fifty complete sentences plagiarized from the PhD dissertation of Dr. Jack Boozer, *The Place of Reason in Paul Tillich’s Concept of God*.

According to *The Papers of Martin Luther King, Jr.*, in King’s dissertation “*only 49% of sentences in the section on Tillich contain five or more words that were King’s own....!*”

In *The Journal of American History*, June 1991, page 87, David J. Garrow, a leftist academic who is sympathetic to King, says that King's wife, Coretta Scott King, who also served as his secretary, was an accomplice in his repeated cheating. (*King's Plagiarism: Imitation, Insecurity and Transformation*, *The Journal of American History*, June 1991, p. 87)

Reading Garrow's article, one is led to the inescapable conclusion that King cheated because he had chosen for himself a political role in which a PhD would be useful, and, lacking the intellectual ability to obtain the title fairly, went after it by any means necessary.

Academic Failure

Why, then, one might ask, did the professors at Crozer Theological Seminary and Boston University grant him passing grades and a PhD? Garrow states on page 89: "*King's academic compositions, especially at Boston University, were almost without exception little more than summary descriptions... and comparisons of other's writings. Nonetheless, the papers almost always received desirable letter grades, strongly suggesting that King's professors did not expect more....*" The editors of *The Martin Luther King Jr. Papers* state that "...the failure of King's teachers to notice his pattern of textual appropriation is somewhat remarkable...."

Political Agenda

Researcher Michael Hoffman tells us "...actually the malfeasance of the professors is not at all remarkable. King was politically correct, he was Black, and he had political ambitions. The leftist [professors were] happy to award a doctorate to such a candidate no matter how much fraud was involved. Nor is it any wonder that it has taken forty years for the truth about King's record of nearly constant intellectual piracy to be made public."

Academic Fraud

Supposed scholars, who in reality shared King's vision of a racially mixed and Marxist America, purposely covered up his cheating for decades. The cover-up still continues. From the *New York Times* of October 11, 1991, page 15, we learn that on October 10th of that year, a committee of researchers at Boston University admitted that, "*There is no question, but that Dr. King plagiarised in the dissertation.*" However, despite its finding, the committee said that "*No thought should be given to the revocation of Dr. King's doctoral degree,*" an action the panel said "*would serve no purpose.*"

Academic Integrity

No purpose, indeed! Justice and academic integrity demands that, in light of his wilful fraud as a student, the "*reverend*" and the "*doctor*" should be removed from King's name.

Communist Connections

King was not a legitimate reverend, he was not a bona fide PhD, and his name was not really "*Martin Luther King, Jr.*" What is left? Just a sexual degenerate with a Marxist agenda. On Labour Day, 1957, a special meeting was attended by Martin Luther King and four others at a strange institution called the Highlander Folk School in Monteagle, Tennessee. The Highlander Folk School was a Communist front, having been founded by Myles Horton (Communist Party organizer for Tennessee) and Don West (Communist Party organizer for North Carolina). The leaders of this meeting with King, were Horton and West, along with Abner Berry and James Dumbrowski, all open and acknowledged members of the Communist Party, USA. The agenda of the meeting was a plan to tour the Southern states to initiate demonstrations and riots.

Rustin

From 1955 to 1960, Martin Luther King's associate, advisor, and personal secretary was Bayard Rustin. In 1936 Rustin joined the Young Communist League at New York City College. Convicted of draft-dodging, he went to prison for two years in 1944. On January 23, 1953 the *Los Angeles Times* reported his conviction and sentencing to jail for 60 days for lewd vagrancy and homosexual perversion. Rustin attended the 16th Convention of the Communist Party, USA in February, 1957.

Southern Christian Leadership Conference

One month later, he and King founded the Southern Christian Leadership Conference, or SCLC for short. The president of the SCLC was Martin Luther King, Jr. The vice-president of the SCLC was the Reverend Fred Shuttlesworth, who was also the president of an identified Communist front known as the Southern Conference Educational Fund, an organisation whose field director, a Mr. Carl Braden, was simultaneously a national sponsor of the Fair Play for Cuba Committee. The program director of the SCLC was Andrew Young, later Jimmy Carter's ambassador to the UN and mayor of Atlanta.

The Soviet Connection

Soon after returning from a trip to Moscow in 1958, Rustin organized the first of King's famous marches on Washington. The official organ of the Communist Party, *The Worker*, openly declared the march to be a Communist project. Although he left King's employ as secretary in 1961, Rustin was called upon by King to be second in command of the much larger march on Washington which took place on August 28, 1963.

Duplicity

Bayard Rustin's replacement in 1961 as secretary and advisor to King was Jack O'Dell, also known as Hunter Pitts O'Dell. According to official records, in 1962 Jack O'Dell was a member of the National Committee of the Communist Party, USA. He had been listed as a Communist Party member as early as 1956. O'Dell was also given the job of acting executive director for SCLC activities for the entire Southeast, according to the St. Louis *Globe-Democrat* of October 26, 1962. When word of O'Dell's party membership became known, King fired O'Dell with much fanfare. He then, without the fanfare, immediately re-hired him again as director of the New York office of the SCLC, as confirmed by the *Richmond News-Leader* of September 27, 1963.

The China Connection

In 1963 a Black man from Monroe, North Carolina named Robert Williams made a trip to Peking, China. Exactly 20 days before King's 1963 march on Washington, Williams successfully urged Mao Tse-Tung to speak out on behalf of King's movement.

The Cuban Connection

Mr. Williams was also around this time maintaining his primary residence in Cuba, from which he made regular broadcasts to the southern US, three times a week, from high-power AM transmitters in Havana under the title *Radio Free Dixie*. In these broadcasts, he urged violent attacks by Blacks against White Americans. During this period, Williams wrote a book entitled *Negroes With Guns*. The writer of the Foreword for this book? None other than Martin Luther King, Jr. It is also interesting to note that the editors and publishers of this book were all supporters of the infamous Fair Play for Cuba Committee.

Revolution

According to King's biographer and sympathizer David J. Garrow, "*King privately described himself as a Marxist.*" In his 1981 book, *The FBI and Martin Luther King, Jr.*, Garrow quotes King as saying in SCLC staff meetings, "*... we have moved into a new era, which must be an era of Revolution.... The whole structure of American life must be changed.... We are engaged in the class struggle.*"

Levison

Stanley Levison can best be described as King's behind-the-scenes "*handler.*" Levison, who had for years been in charge of the secret funnelling of Soviet funds to the Communist Party, USA, was King's mentor and was actually the brains behind many of King's more successful ploys. It was Levison who edited King's book, *Stride Toward Freedom*. It was Levison who arranged for a publisher. Levison even prepared King's income tax returns! It was Levison who really controlled the fund-raising and agitation activities of the SCLC. Levison wrote many of King's speeches. King described Levison as one of his "*closest friends.*"

FBI: King Bought Sex with SCLC Money

The Federal Bureau of Investigation had for many years been aware of Stanley Levison's Communist activities. It was Levison's close association with King that brought about the initial FBI interest in King. Lest you be tempted to believe the controlled media's lie about "*racists*" in the FBI being out to "*get*" King, you should be aware that the man most responsible for the FBI's probe of King was Assistant Director William C. Sullivan. Sullivan describes himself as a liberal, and says that initially "*I was one hundred per cent for King...because I saw him as an effective and badly needed leader for the Black people in their desire for civil rights.*" The probe of King not only confirmed their suspicions about King's Communist beliefs and associations, but it also revealed King to be a hypocrite, an immoral degenerate, and a charlatan.

Embezzlement

According to Assistant Director Sullivan, who had direct access to the surveillance files on King which are denied the American people, King had embezzled, or misapplied, substantial amounts of money contributed to the "*civil rights*" movement. King used SCLC funds to pay for liquor, and numerous prostitutes, both Black and White, who were brought to his hotel rooms, often two at a time, for drunken sex parties which sometimes lasted for several days. These types of activities were normative for King's speaking and organizing tours.

Whoremongering

The National Civil Rights Museum in Memphis, Tennessee, which is putting on display the two bedrooms from the Lorraine Motel where King stayed the night before he was shot, has declined to depict in any way the “occupants” of those rooms. That “according to exhibit designer Gerard Eisterhold “would be “close to blasphemy.” The reason? Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr. spent his last night on earth having sex with two women at the motel and physically beating and abusing a third.

Adulterous Affairs

Sullivan also stated that King had alienated the affections of numerous married women. According to Sullivan, who in 30 years with the Bureau had seen everything there was to be seen of the steamy side of life, King was one of seven people he had encountered who was a total degenerate.

Tactical Non-Violence

Noting the violence that almost invariably attended King’s supposedly “non-violent” marches, Sullivan’s probe revealed a very different King from the carefully crafted public image. King welcomed members of many different Black groups as members of his SCLC, many of them advocates and practitioners of violence. King’s only admonition on the subject was that they should embrace “*tactical nonviolence*.”

The FBI Files on MLK

Sullivan also related an incident in which King met in a financial conference with Communist Party representatives, not knowing that one of the participants was an infiltrator actually working for the FBI. J. Edgar Hoover personally saw to it that documented information on King’s Communist connections were forwarded to the President and to Congress. Conclusive information from FBI files was also provided to major newspapers and news wire services. Even in the 1960s, “*the controlled*” media and politicians were determined to push their racial mixing program on America. King was their man and nothing was allowed to get in their way. With a few minor exceptions, these facts have been kept from the American people. The pro-King propaganda machine grinds on, and many Christians publically quote MLK more prominently than many Bible passages.

The Agenda

What are the forces and motivation behind the controlled media’s active promotion of King? What does it tell you about our politicians when you see them, almost without exception, falling all over themselves to honour King as a national hero? What does it tell you about our society when any public criticism of this very flawed individual is considered grounds for dismissal? What does it tell you about the controlled media when you see how they have successfully suppressed the truth and held out a picture of King that can only be described as propaganda?

The Sealed FBI Files on MLK

King was under FBI surveillance for several years (until he died) due to his ties with communist organizations throughout the country. King accepted money from the organizations to fund his movements. In return, King had to appoint communist leaders to run certain districts of his SCLC (Southern Christian Leadership Conference), who then could project their communist ideas to larger audiences. A federal judge in the 60’s ruled that the FBI files on King’s links to communism to remain top-secret until 2027. Senator Jesse Helms appealed to the Supreme Court in 1983 to release the files, so the current bill in the Senate to create the Martin Luther King Federal Holiday could be abolished. He was denied.

He was christened Michael King at birth on January 13, 1929.

King’s famous ‘I Have a Dream’ speech was not his own. In both letter and spirit, the rousing conclusion of King’s most famous speech borrows, without attribution, from one given eleven years earlier by family friend Archibald Carey at the 1952 Republican National Convention: [*I Have a Dream*](#)

While gathering and collating King’s writings for publication in the late 1980s, the editors of Stanford University’s [Martin Luther King, Jr. Papers Project](#) discovered “*extensive plagiaries*” in his academic papers, including his 1955 doctoral dissertation. All these instances of plagiarism had apparently escaped detection during King’s lifetime, even by his dissertation supervisors at Boston University.

“*And you shall know the truth and the truth shall make you free.*” John 8:32

Dr. Peter Hammond

Reformation Society

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725

Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021-689-4480

Email: mission@frontline.org.za

Website: www.ReformationSA.org

LESSONS FROM THE RWANDAN HOLOCAUST

“I know there is a God, because in Rwanda I shook hands with the devil. I have seen him, I have smelt him and I have touched him. I know the devil exists and therefore I know there is a God!”

Shake Hands with the Devil

These are the words of Canadian General Romeo Dallaire, the Commander of the United Nations Mission to Rwanda (UNIMIR). His book, *Shake Hands With the Devil* (which has also been made into a dramatic film), documents the unfolding catastrophe, and as he puts it in the subtitle of his book: *“The Failure of Humanity in Rwanda.”*

24 Years Ago

As the people of Rwanda soberly reflect on the holocaust which was unleashed upon them 24 years ago, April 1994, there are still compelling questions which demand answers.

How could such dreadful mass murder take place within sight and sound of United Nations peacekeepers without the international community doing anything to stop it?

Could the holocaust in Rwanda have been prevented?

What steps must we take to ensure that such atrocities do not occur again?

Enabling the Genocide

General Dallaire reports that the United Nations leadership knew of the stockpiling of weapons. Indeed UN Secretary General Boutros Boutros-Ghali, in his role as Egyptian Foreign Minister, had facilitated a large sale of arms from Egypt to the MRND dictatorship of Rwanda prior to the genocide. The Rwandan Armed Forces (FAR) expanded rapidly, trebling in size while receiving much training and weapons from the French government.

Preparation for Genocide

From March 1993 the Hutu MRND government began compiling lists of “traitors” who they planned to kill, meticulously marking their addresses. Radio Television Libre Des Mille Collines (RTL) broadcast a mixture of tribal propaganda, music and obscene jokes against the Tutsi, continually inciting the Hutu majority to hate, despise and massacre the Tutsi minority.

Hundreds-of-thousands of machetes were imported from Red China. The Interahamwe party thugs of the MRND were armed with AK-47s and massive quantities of machetes distributed throughout the country in preparation for the genocide.

Forewarned

General Dallaire informed the Secretary General of the UN of these ominous developments. However, when he planned to seize the illegal weapon stockpiles, Dallaire was stunned to be ordered to stand down! The general was directly forbidden to intervene!

Genocide Unleashed

The assassination of Rwandan President Juvenal Habyarimana, by a French heat-seeking missile, fired by his own Presidential Guard, on 6 April 1994, was the pretext to launch the well-prepared genocide of the mostly Protestant Tutsis. Government forces set up a dense network of roadblocks and mobilised Interahamwe mobs to systematically go house-to-house massacring Tutsis. At roadblocks those identified as Tutsi were pulled out and hacked to death on the spot.

A Harvest of Death

Out of a total population of 7.3 million, 84% of who were Hutu, 15% Tutsi and 1% Twa. African Rights calculated 750,000 murdered. The United Nations estimated the toll as above 800,000. The present government of Rwanda and the Holocaust Museum in Kigali, states that 1,171,000 were killed, 90% of which were Tutsi. The Genocide Museum in Kigali calculates that during the 100 days of the genocide, an average of 10,000 were murdered every day, 400 every hour, and 7 every minute. They estimate that over 400,000 were orphaned as a result of the genocide.

Shooting Dogs

The 2005 film, *Shooting Dogs*, which was released in the United States as *Beyond the Gates*, focused on the United Nations abandoning of the Ecole Technique Officielle (ETO) in Kigali, in 1994. Based on the experiences of BBC News producer, David Belton, who worked in Rwanda during the genocide, Belton was the film’s co-writer and one of its producers. Unlike *Hotel Rwanda*, which was filmed in South Africa, using

American and South African actors, this film, *Beyond the Gates*, was shot at the original locations of the scenes it portrays in Rwanda. Most of the actors in the film were Rwandese survivors of the massacre. The film's title, *Shooting Dogs*, refers to the actions of UN soldiers in shooting the stray dogs that scavenged the bodies of the dead. Since the UN forces were not allowed to shoot at the Hutu mass murderers who were causing the deaths in the first place, the shooting of the dogs was symbolic of the madness of the situation and the insanity of the United Nations rules of engagement.

Prior Warnings Ignored

General Dallaire, had sent a fax to United Nations headquarters in January 1994, detailing the planned anti-Tutsi Genocide. He identified the locations of illegal arms cachets, the order to register all Tutsi in Kigali, and the Interhambwe plan to use these lists to exterminate them all. A high level informant provided exact details of the Interhambwe plans including the fact that they calculated that they could kill 1,000 every 20 minutes.

Abandoned

When the UN abandoned the Don Bosco Technical School, filled with 2,000 Tutsi refugees, the Hutu Interhambwe slaughtered them all.

Undermined

The Administrative Head of UNIMIR, former Cameroonian Foreign Minister, Jacques-Roger Booh-Booh, maintained close ties to the militant Hutu elite and on every side undermined and frustrated General Dallaire's efforts to prevent the genocide and save lives: The United States president Bill Clinton's administration policy also undermined every effort by General Dallaire to save lives in Rwanda.

American Interference

The Clinton administration policy was summarised as: *"Let's withdraw altogether. Let's get out of Rwanda. Leave it to its fate."* The United States Ambassador to the UN at that time, Madeline Albright, consistently lobbied for a withdrawal of UNIMIR Forces, from the earliest in April 1994. This effectively abandoned all refugees who had sought sanctuary with the UN to their fate at the hand of the Interhambwe. US Secretary of State, Warren Christopher, consistently argued against using the term "genocide" until 21 May, and even then US officials waited another three weeks before using that term in public. The US government also refused to jam the extremist RTLM radio broadcasts, which were co-ordinating the genocide, citing the costs and concern with international law!

Betrayed

General Dallaire reveals that president Clinton and his cabinet were made aware of the Final Solution to exterminate all Tutsis before the massacres even began. Every request from General Dallaire was frustrated and his peacekeepers did not receive the food, fuel, weapons, equipment, ammunition, or even the armoured personnel carriers, ordered. UN procrastination led to intense suffering, unnecessary deaths and starvation in the UN bases - which were meant to be sanctuaries for refugees fleeing the killing.

The French Connection

The disgraceful role of France in the Rwandan genocide defies belief. The French government provided vast quantities of weapons and numerous military advisors and technical assistance to the Rwandan Armed Forces before and during the genocide. On 22 June, as the Tutsi-led Rwandese Patriotic Front (RPF) turned the tide and began to liberate the country, sending the Hutu FAR and Interhambwe fleeing, France launched Operation Turquoise, creating a safe zone into which the Hutu FAR and Interhambwe could flee and receive protection behind a French military screen. The French Operation Turquoise effectively enabled the genocidaries to escape from the RPF and flee into neighbouring Zaire (Congo), where they received generous quantities of foreign aid and caused more massacres leading to the Great Lakes War of 1996 to 1997, in which 12 African nation's armed forces became embroiled and millions died.

Accessories to Genocide

General Dallaire reported that France was supplying weapons and ammunition to the MRND Hutu dictatorship and their FAR, even during the height of the genocide. The findings of the Rwandese Justice Commission were released on 5 August 2008. It accused 32 senior French military and political officials of involvement in the genocide, including: then President Francois Mitterrand, his General Secretary, Hubert Verdrine, the then Prime Minister, Edouard Balladur, the then Foreign Minister, Alain Juppe and his Chief Aid, Dominique de Villepin.

Reaction Against French Complicity

As a result of the Rwandese Justice Ministry Commission on the involvement of France in the genocide, the Rwandese government shut down all French institutions in and around Kigali, including schools and cultural organisations. The language of instruction in Rwandese schools was switched from French to English. Rwanda became one of only two members of the British led Commonwealth that had not formerly been British colonies.

In the Valley of Death

I can never forget the overwhelming stench of death as I walked knee deep, and sometimes waist high, amidst corpses in churches in Rwanda. The plague of rats, feasting off the bodies, the millions of flying and crawling insects and suffocating odour of death is not something that one can ever really recover from. I delivered Bibles in Kinyarwanda, and French to pastors and to prisoners around Rwanda and undertook painful interviews with survivors to document what had happened, and why.

Exposing the Forces Behind the Genocide

We have produced two editions of [*Holocaust in Rwanda – The Roles of Gun Control, Media Manipulation, Liberal Church Leaders and the United Nations in English*](#), and another edition in [*French*](#). It needs to be emphasized that Rwanda was a gun-free zone. The mass murderers successfully manipulated and abused the media to vilify the targeted Tutsis and to mobilise masses of Hutus to kill their neighbours. The scandalous role of the French government in providing assistance, training and weapons to the mass murderers and providing sanctuary for architects of the genocide, is also revealed in this book.

Christian Traitors

In addition, *Holocaust in Rwanda* looks at the challenge the systematic mass murders presents to the Christian church. The killers did not merely kill people in churches, they killed church workers, pastors, ministers, priests and nuns. However, the most shocking aspect of the anti-Christian mass-murder was how many people responsible for the slaughter were trusted members of congregations! On many occasions, priests, nuns, and ministers were directly involved in the genocide. Several heads of denominations co-operated with the Interhambwe, betraying their Tutsi members and co-workers into the hands of ruthless mass-murderers. Tribalism seemed more important to most.

Judas's in the Church

The role of these traitors, blood-stained bishops and murderous ministers are an indictment upon the theological seminaries and church councils they belonged to. Those who do not wholeheartedly love the Lord Jesus Christ and His Word are not qualified to be spiritual leaders.

Moral Cowardice Helped Cause the Catastrophe

The Rwandan holocaust exposes the emptiness of the superficial and self-centred easy-believism which all too often masquerades as the Gospel. Compromise and moral cowardice helped cause the catastrophe. "... *Should you help the wicked and love those who hate the Lord? Therefore the wrath of the Lord is upon you.*" 2 Chronicles 19:2

David Defeats Goliath

The genocide ultimately failed, in that the victims became the victors and the Tutsi minority surprised everyone by fighting back and gaining control over the whole country. Today Rwanda is one of the best run and most open to free enterprise countries in Africa. "*Unless the Lord builds the house, they labour in vain who build it; unless the Lord guards the city, The watchman stays awake in vain.*" Psalm 127:1

Firm Foundations for Freedom

Most important, *Holocaust in Rwanda* looks at some of the lessons which need to be learned in order to ensure that such atrocities do not occur again. We need to lay solid foundations for the future that will prevent such oppression from ever occurring again. These are Biblical principles which are not only important for Rwanda, but for every society that values life and liberty. *Holocaust in Rwanda* concludes with the [*Biblical Principles*](#), which had they been adhered to, there would have been no holocaust in Rwanda.

Learning from Rwanda

There is much for us to learn from the tragic events of 1994 that are most relevant in the light of those talking about a second phase of the revolution in South Africa and threatening to exterminate the white minority. "*Blessed be the Lord my Rock, who trains my hands for war, and my fingers for battle. My lovingkindness and my fortress, my high tower and my deliverer, my shield and the One in whom I take refuge...*" Psalm 144:1-2

Chapter 21

RACISM – RHETORIC AND REALITY

Only Biblical Christianity offers a rational basis for opposing racism and for pursuing justice. Equality before the Law is a Biblical principle:

A Common Law

“The community is to have the same rules for you and for the alien living among you; this is a lasting ordinance for the generations to come. You and the alien shall be the same before the Lord. The same laws and regulations will apply both to you and to the alien living among you.” Numbers 15:15-16

Equity in Law

“Do not pervert justice; do not show partiality to the poor or favouritism to the great, but judge your neighbour fairly.” Leviticus 19:15

Unity in Christ

“There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free, male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus.” Galatians 3:28

Removing Enmity

“For He Himself is our peace Who has made the two one and has destroyed the barrier, the dividing wall of hostility.” Ephesians 2:14

Creation

“From one man He made every nation of men...” Acts 17:26

A Ministry of Reconciliation

“Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; the old has gone, the new has come! All this is from God who reconciled us to Himself through Christ and gave us the ministry of reconciliation: that God was reconciling the world to Himself in Christ, not counting men’s sins against them. And He has committed to us the message of reconciliation.” 2 Corinthians 5:17-19

The Greatest Commandment

“Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength...love your neighbour as yourself.” Mark 12:30-31

Slavery in the Ancient World

Before the coming of Christ, the heathen nations despised honest work and consigned it to slaves. When Christ was born, half of the population of the Roman Empire were slaves. Three quarters of the population of Athens were slaves.

Setting the Captives Free

But Jesus revolutionised labour. By taking up the axe, the saw, the hammer and the plane, our Lord imbued labour with a new dignity. Christianity undercut slavery by giving dignity to work. By reforming work Christianity transformed the entire social order. Our Lord Jesus Christ began His ministry in Nazareth with these words: *“The Spirit of the Lord is on Me...to proclaim freedom for the prisoners...and release to the oppressed.”* Luke 4:18

No Longer as a Slave

When the Apostle Paul wrote to Philemon concerning his escaped slave, he urged him to welcome back Onesimus *“no longer as a slave, but...as a dear brother...as a man and as a brother in the Lord.”* Philemon 16

Eradicating the Slave Trade

Because of these and other Scriptural commands to love our neighbour, to be good Samaritans and to do for others what you would want them to do for you, Christians like St. Patrick, William Wilberforce, John Newton, William Carey, David Livingstone, Lord Shaftsbury and General Charles Gordon, and so many others, worked tirelessly to end the slave trade, stop child labour and set the captives free. Amongst all the religions of the world, only Christianity brought an end to the slave trade.

Social Darwinism Promotes Racism

On the other hand, those who hold to Darwin’s theory of evolution, have no objective basis with which to counter racism. In fact, Darwinian Evolutionism has inspired a whole host of racist ideologies and movements including Communism. The actual title of Darwin’s famous evolutionary book is: *“On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection, or the Preservation of Favoured Races in the Struggle for Life.”*

Evolution Leads to Revolution

Karl Marx wanted to dedicate "*Das Kapital*" to Charles Darwin and wrote "*Darwin's book is very important and serves me as a basis in the natural sciences for the historical class struggle.*" "*Violence is the midwife...*" As Lenin and Stalin so succinctly put it: "*Evolution leads to revolution.*"

Marx and Darwin Were Racists

Both Darwin and Marx expressed racist views. It is ironic that so many Russians and Africans have held Marxist beliefs, because Marx himself despised the Slavs and the Blacks, writing that slaves were "*ethnic trash*" and Blacks were "*frozen at pre-civilisation levels*" and would never make any contribution to history! (*Karl Marx The Racist*, 1978; *Understanding The Times*, David Noebel, 1991; *Marx and Satan*, Richard Wurmbrand).

Slaves of Corruption

"They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves of depravity..." 2 Peter 2:19

Antagonism

The Oxford English Dictionary defines racism as: "*...discrimination against or antagonism towards other races.*"

Hypocrisy

Yet many who speak out vitriolically against racism, are themselves racist, displaying intense antagonism towards people of other races, and advocating policies which discriminate on the basis of race.

Colour or Character?

These are many of the same people who would respect Martin Luther King Jr., but who are not willing to live by his maxim: "*They will not be judged by the colour of their skin, but by the content of their character.*"

The Genocide in Rwanda

Frustrated people easily give in to character conditioned hate. The easiest idea to sell anyone is that he is better than someone else. The [Holocaust in Rwanda](#) where mobs of Hutus slaughtered over 800 000 Tutsi Christians is just one example of the destructive power of tribalism in Africa today. More people were killed with machetes in six weeks in Rwanda, than have been killed by nuclear weapons in all of history. There are those amongst the ANC and EFF in South Africa openly advocating a similar genocide against Whites in South Africa.

Justifying Cruelty and Mass Murder

H.G. Wells noted that racism "*justifies and holds together more baseness, cruelty and abomination than any other sort of error in the world.*" Professor Noel Ignater in Harvard Magazine (Oct2002) wrote: "*The goal of abolishing the white race is, on the face of it, so desirable that some may find it hard to believe that it could... any opposition... Make no mistake, we intend to keep bashing the dead white males, and the live ones, and the females too, until the social construct known as the white race is destroyed.*" Prof. Noel Ignater has declared: "*I would like to put white males in concentration camps. When they are all dead we can throw a party and dance around their corpses.*" Abraham Heschel described racism as "*the maximum of hatred for a minimum of reason.*"

Supporting Extreme Racial Hatred

It is disturbing how many African leaders, while ostensibly opposing racism support one of the most vitriolic racists on the continent today: Robert Mugabe. Despite Zimbabwean dictator, Robert Mugabe, being guilty of some of the most vicious racism with a disastrous policy of state sponsored terrorism, the stealing and looting of farms and businesses, murder of farmers and opposition members, terrorising of supreme court justices, bombing of opposition newspaper offices, imprisoning of critics and reckless promotion of racial hatred against whites, the ANC government of South Africa steadfastly refuses to criticise Mugabe.

National Suicide

The crisis in Zimbabwe is severe. People are dying of starvation in a man-made famine, orchestrated by the ZANU-PF government of Robert Mugabe. Thousands of productive farms have been seized by government organised mobs. Vast herds of cattle and wildlife have been slaughtered. Crops and stores burned. Farmhouses looted. Many people beaten or murdered.

Economic Suicide

One of the most productive agricultural economies in Africa has been systematically destroyed because of fanatical racial hatred. Not only did these farms feed the entire nation, but they also exported food, providing the highest percentage of foreign exchange earnings. These commercial farms were also the largest employers of labour in the country and provided homes for up to four million farm workers and their dependants.

Degrees in Violence

Yet, the President of Zimbabwe, Robert Mugabe, needing a scapegoat for his failed socialism, played the race card and declared: *"Farmers are enemies of the state!... We have degrees in violence!... Those farmers who resist will die!"* When a thief wants to pick your pocket he needs to distract you. Politicians have become experts in organising distractions from their corruption and failure.

Stealing Elections

During Presidential Elections in Zimbabwe thousands of MDC election observers and supporters have been arrested in massive nationwide clamp downs on the opposition. Human rights groups have documented many hundreds of thousands of cases of human rights abuses in the run up to the elections. These included severe beatings, abductions, torture and murder. ZANU-PF officials, supporters, war veterans and youth brigade militia have rampaged through residential areas, attacking people indiscriminately, beating street vendors, dragging white farmers from their cars, savagely beating and murdering many.

Winking at Evil

Yet, although almost all observers condemned these elections as fraudulent, incredibly, the African National Congress (ANC) government of South Africa have repeatedly expressed their *"warm congratulations"* to Robert Mugabe for *"convincing majority wins."*

Blatant Dishonesty

Many condemned the ANC's *"obscene haste"* to declare the polls legitimate, even before all the reports had come in. When the head of the South African Observer Commission declared the elections *"legitimate"* and brushed aside the widespread murder, violence, abduction and torture of observers and massive irregularities, he was jeered by journalists and diplomats alike. When questioned about the disenfranchisement of hundreds of thousands of voters in Zimbabwe, the ANC official dismissed it as *"an administrative oversight!"* Journalists laughed out loud, stood up and walked out in disgust. *"Whoever says to the guilty, you are innocent - peoples will curse him and nations denounce him."* Proverbs 24:24

Blinded by Racial Hatred

It is evident that this blind support for Mugabe is inspired, in large part, by racial prejudice. Despite Mugabe engineering one of the most *"spectacular economic collapses in history"* with his national suicide of Zimbabwe, all too many black political leaders support him - irrespective of the lawlessness and savagery afflicting the population of Zimbabwe.

Sustainable Destruction

This racism and hypocrisy has also been evident at world events such as the UN World Summit on Sustainable Development hosted in South Africa. Even while Mugabe's supporters were slaughtering endangered wildlife and destroying huge forests and game reserves in Zimbabwe, Mugabe was being applauded as a key note speaker at the World Summit on Sustainable Development! Some of the greatest game reserves in Africa have been in Zimbabwe. Now many of these wildlife sanctuaries are scenes of unprecedented slaughter. Along with the wholesale poaching, Marxist mobs have been engaged in wholesale theft, abductions and murder. Properties have been burned out, tourists have been chased out of safari camps and game rangers have been assaulted and even killed. *"How long will the land lie parched and the grass in every field be withered? Because those who live in it are wicked, the animals and birds have perished."* Jeremiah 12:4

The Death of Justice

Under Mugabe even judges have been assaulted by mobs in their chambers in court, journalists and editors have been arrested and tortured, pastors have been arrested for praying for peace and justice, and the only independent daily newspaper and radio station in Zimbabwe were blown up. *"Destructive forces are at work in the city; threats and lies never leave its streets."* Psalm 55:11

Scandalous Double Standards

How can anybody in the ANC ever again speak against the racial discrimination of *"apartheid South Africa"*, when they have instituted their own racial discrimination through Black Economic Empowerment racial quotas, job reservation affirmative action in South Africa, smashing historic monuments, burning priceless, irreplaceable works of art, singing about killing whites, murdering farmers in torturous ways, and are so enthusiastically supportive of Robert Mugabe's vicious racism in Zimbabwe? *"Woe to those who call evil good and good evil, who put darkness for light and light for darkness...who are wise in their own eyes...who acquit the guilty for a bribe, but deny justice to the innocent...for they have rejected the Law of the Lord Almighty..."* Isaiah 5:20-24

It turns out that those screaming *"racism!"* the most, are the worst racists of all.

MANDELA DAY AND THE MAKING OF A NEW RELIGION

United Nations Resolution

18 July is, according to the United Nations General Assembly, “*Nelson Mandela International Day*”! This they said is “*in recognition of the former South African president’s contribution to the culture of peace and freedom.*” The General Assembly Resolution: “*recognises Nelson Mandela’s values and his dedication to the service of humanity, in the fields of conflict resolution, race relations, the promotion and protection of human rights, reconciliation, gender equality and the rights of children and other vulnerable groups, as well as the upliftment of poor and undeveloped communities. It acknowledges his contribution to the struggle for democracy internationally and the promotion of a culture of peace throughout the world.*”

Personality Cults

With songs of praise and hymns glorifying Nelson Mandela being sung by choirs and taught to school children, we seem to be seeing the beginning of a new religion. The ancient pharaohs were worshipped as gods. The chairmen of the Communist Party in the Soviet Union, were elevated to cult status, particularly in the case of Vladimir Lenin, whose tomb continued to be a site of pilgrimage. When Joseph Stalin was dictator of the Soviet Union, the cult of the chairman reached new heights, or rather depths.

Emperor Worship

In Romania, Communist Party General Secretary, Nikolai Ceausescu, became the focal point of emperor worship, such as the world had not seen since the days of the caesars of Rome. Over 8,000 hymns of praise were composed, honouring the communist dictator, Ceausescu. Literally millions of his pictures adorned homes, offices, schools and government buildings.

Celebrity Cults

Hollywood certainly has produced many celebrity cults. However, the extravagant praise and idolising of Nelson Mandela as a hero/martyr and ideal example, has exceeded all bounds. The mythology and idolatry surrounding the Mandela cult is startling.

Indoctrination

Choirs have sung songs and hymns in praise of Nelson Mandela. Concerts and events have been organised in his honour. Massive posters have been erected on Civic Centres. The Department of Education has apparently replaced education – teaching children **how** to think, with indoctrination – teaching children **what** to think. In order to enable Nelson Mandela to be entered into the Guinness Book of Records, various publicity stunts were promoted, including requiring children of all ages in the classroom to write birthday cards to Nelson Mandela and sing Happy Birthday to him on 18 July, to create new records. Then school children were required to write Tributes and Dedications, praising Nelson Mandela and no dissent was permitted. This was a directive to all schools, even independent schools, from the Ministry of Education!

Mandela’s Abortion Legacy

This is deeply disturbing on many levels. For example: Are pro-life Christians expected to put their values to one side and deify the man who rammed through parliament, against all opposition, his bill legalising abortion in South Africa? Over one million, three hundred thousand babies have been killed, officially, legally, in South Africa, with tax-payers’ money, since Nelson Mandela signed the Termination of Pregnancy Bill, 1 February 1997. Life begins at conception. Abortion is murder.

Pornography is Propaganda for a Rape Culture

The UN General Assembly may speak of Nelson Mandela’s “*promotion of the rights of children and other vulnerable groups*”, but under his presidency pornography was legalised. The South African Police Services, Child Protection Unit reported that child rape increased over 400% as a result.

Supporting Dictators

The General Assembly may claim that Nelson Mandela “*contributed to the struggle for democracy internationally and the promotion of a culture of peace throughout the world*”, yet he closed down South Africa’s Embassy in the Republic of China on the island of Taiwan and opened up South Africa’s Embassy in Communist China, a one party dictatorship with a brutal human rights record. Nelson Mandela welcomed to South Africa the longest reigning dictator in the world, Fidel Castro and gave him the highest award this country can offer. Mandela also assembled both Houses of Parliament for Fidel Castro to address. A rare privilege. As president, Nelson Mandela uncritically supported some of the worst dictatorships on the planet such as Castro’s Cuba, Mugabe’s Zimbabwe, Communist China, Gaddafi’s Libya, Saddam Hussein’s Iraq and numerous other states notorious for their human rights abuses.

Pornography is the Theory - Rape is the Practise

The General Assembly Resolution may speak of Nelson Mandela's "*dedication to the service of humanity... gender equality...*" yet under him, pornography was legalised and prostitution effectively decriminalised, human trafficking exploded in South Africa. Incidents of rape exploded exponentially in the country as sex shops and pornography were, for the first time, allowed in South Africa.

Do Not Let Facts Get in the Way of a Good Story!

The UN Declaration describes Nelson Mandela as "*a prisoner of conscience.*" However the fact is that even Amnesty International refused to take on Nelson Mandela's case, because they asserted that he was not a political prisoner, but had committed numerous violent crimes and had had a fair trial and a reasonable sentence.

The Unanswered Reason Why

The most radical newspapers of the day, such as The Star and Rand Daily Mail praised the leniency of the Court in giving away the lightest possible sentence for such violent crimes. In 1964, anyone in America, or Britain, or France, who committed such crimes would have been executed.

Just and Fair

Even the Rand Daily Mail, the most outspoken, liberal newspaper at the time in South Africa and, in many ways, a supporter of Mandela and the ANC, wrote about the sentences passed by the judge: "*The sentences pronounced by Judge De Wet at the close of the Rivonia trial are both wise and just. The law is best served when there is firmness tinged with mercy and this was the case yesterday. The sentences could not have been less severe than those imposed. The men found guilty had planned sabotage on a wide scale and had conspired for armed revolution. As the judge pointed out yesterday, the crime of which they were found guilty was really high treason. The death penalty would have been justified.*"

Mercy

These are the facts of history. Sentencing Mandela to imprisonment, instead of letting him be hanged, was an act of mercy on the part of his political enemies. Mandela had, therefore, every reason to be grateful and no reason to harbour a grudge against them. He owed his life to them.

Terror Bombing Campaign

Nelson Mandela was the head of UmKhonto we Sizwe (MK), the terrorist wing of the ANC and South African Communist Party. He had pleaded guilty to 156 acts of public violence including mobilizing terrorist bombing campaigns, which planted bombs in public places. This included the Johannesburg railway station bombing. Many innocent people, including women and children, were killed by Nelson Mandela's MK terrorists. President Obama, when condemning the Boston bombings declared: "*Any time bombs are used to target innocent civilians it is an act of terror.*" Obama denounced the Boston bombings as "*cruel*", "*savage*" and "*malevolent*", yet he still seems to honour a man responsible for many such terror attacks! Obama praises Mandela as his "*role model*".

Refusal to Renounce Terrorism

South African President P.W. Botha had, on a number of occasions, offered Nelson Mandela freedom from prison, if he would only renounce terrorist violence. This Mandela refused to do.

Controversial

Many people may highly respect and idolise Nelson Mandela because of the *Invictus* film and the very positive image portrayed through most of the mass media. However, there are many South Africans who would disagree. Nelson Mandela remains a controversial figure.

Crime Wave

Under Nelson Mandela's presidency an average of 25,000 people were murdered each year. Yet, to celebrate his birthdays, Nelson Mandela would regularly open prison doors and set many convicted criminals, including armed robbers, murderers and rapists, free. Some of these were murdering and raping within 24 hours of being released. Well over 100,000 people were murdered under Mandela's term as president.

Economic Deterioration

In the 1970s, even while facing terrorism, riots and engaged in a border war with the Cubans in Angola, the South Africa Rand was stronger than the US Dollar. However, after years of international sanctions, the South African Rand had fallen to R2 to the Dollar. In Mandela's first four years as president, the Rand lost 80% of its value and more than 2.8 million man-days were lost to strikes. The national debt also doubled under Nelson Mandela's presidency. Under Nelson Mandela, even with no war, no sanctions, no riots, no conscription and with massive international aid and investment, the Rand plummeted to R8 to the Dollar and even to R10 to the Dollar. Even publications such as *The Economist* described Nelson Mandela's presidency at the time as "*a failure*". Economic deterioration and skyrocketing crime marred his presidency.

Idolising a Mythical Figure

However, we are meant to forget all these facts and shelve our pro-life, pro-family, moral convictions and bow before this new idol, sing a politician's praises and effectively burn incense before the image of a new Caesar!

Refusal to Compromise our Faith

Historically, Christians have refused to bow before any idol, nor give the worship due to the Creator alone to anyone else. Daniel ended up in the Lion's Den, Shadrack, Meshach and Abednego were thrown into the fiery furnace and countless Christians were thrown to the lions in the arena for refusing to engage in the statism of their day.

An Abuse of Education

It would appear to be an abuse of education to require students to write a positive tribute, or dedication, to any political figure, whom they and their family may have serious reservations about. Education is teaching one how to think. Indoctrination is teaching one what to think.

Freedom of Conscience

In any civilised and free society there needs to be room for dissent. Medical personnel who do not want to be part of an abortion should not be forced against their conscience to participate. A teacher who believes in traditional family values should not be required to teach what they see as immorality and perversion. Nor should any student be required to idolise, whether through an assignment, or through singing the praises of a politician.

Margaret Thatcher

When Margaret Thatcher, arguably the most outstanding Prime Minister in recent British history, died, most of the United Kingdom mourned and honoured her memory and achievements. However, it would not be reasonable to expect every child, in every school, in Great Britain to write a tribute to Margaret Thatcher, because some would belong to families who would have disagreed with her economic policies.

Ronald Reagan

Ronald Reagan is widely recognised as the greatest president in most American's memory. However, again, one could not imagine a requirement that every school child in the United States would have to write a positive tribute to Ronald Reagan, as surely there may be some who would disagree.

Mother Theresa

Even someone as widely respected as Mother Theresa would have her detractors. One could not expect Protestants to idolise someone who prayed to statues of Mary, no matter how much good work she did amongst the poor of India.

Divisive and Offensive

Neither is it reasonable to railroad school children in South Africa into a celebrity cult of any past president of South Africa. Politics is frequently divisive. We would be wiser seeking to focus our children's attention on that which is uplifting and edifying to all.

Worship God Alone

Certainly no Christian can in good conscience, participate in idolatry. God our Creator and Eternal Judge is the only One who deserves our worship, praise and adoration.

"It is for freedom that Christ has set us free. Stand firm, then and do not let yourselves be burdened again by a yoke of slavery... You, my brothers, were called to be free. But do not use your freedom to indulge the sinful nature; rather, serve one another in love." Galatians 5:1,13

Dr. Peter Hammond

Frontline Fellowship

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725

Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021-689-4480

Email: mission@frontline.org.za

Website: www.frontlinemissionsa.org

Chapter 23

TERRORISM IN GREAT BRITAIN

Jihad in England

The spate of Islamic terrorist attacks in Great Britain this year, including the high profile, 22 March Westminster attack, where Khalid Masood drove a vehicle into pedestrians on Westminster Bridge before crashing into the Palace of Westminster perimeter and fatally stabbed a police officer; the Manchester Arena bombing, 22 May, where a suicide bomber killed 22 people and injured another 120; and now the London attacks of Saturday, 3 June, when a van drove at speed across London Bridge deliberately ploughing over groups of people, then the occupants ran into Borough Market where they stabbed many people, before all three terrorists were shot dead by the police. The London Bridge attackers have been identified by the police as: Khuram Shagad Butt, Rachid Redouane and Youssef Zaghba.

A Question of Motive

The response of many in the media seemed to lack an historic perspective. The Muslim mayor of London, Sadiq Khan, has claimed that such terrorist attacks are “*part and parcel*” of living in a large city! Many media and political leaders never tire of telling us that Islam is a peaceful and tolerant religion, the Islamic State is not Islamic and Muslim terrorists are not Muslim. Jihadists quoting the Quran while beheading victims have nothing to do with the Quran and attackers shouting “*Allah Akbar!*” don’t really mean it and their motive is not clear.

Questions We Must Ask

What is inspiring and provoking such hideous terror attacks? What is the philosophy behind terrorism? What can be done to counter, uproot and prevent such terrorism from occurring in the future?

The Gunpowder Plot

One of the oldest incidents of attempted terrorism in London was the Gunpowder Plot, organised by Catholic conspirators led by Guy Fawkes. The plot, which was uncovered and foiled, 5 November 1605, was an attempt to assassinate King James I during the State Opening of Parliament. 36 barrels of gunpowder had been smuggled into the House of Parliament and the House of Lords, with the intention of blowing up the elected members of Parliament, the Bishops and Lords of England, as well as the King of England.

The Clerkenwell Outrage

On 13 December 1867, the Irish Republican Brotherhood (nicknamed the Fenians) killed 12 people and injured 120 with a bombing called the Clerkenwell Outrage in an attempt to free one of their members being held on remand in Clerkenwell prison. Between 1881 and 1887, the Irish Republican Fenians waged a dynamite campaign targeting infrastructure, government, military and police in Great Britain, particularly London, with the avowed aim of establishing an Independent Irish Republic.

The IRA’s S-Plan

The next spate of terrorism in England was in the 1930’s and 40’s when the Irish Republican Army (IRA) launched their S-Plan (Sabotage Campaign), targeting civilian, economic and military infrastructure of the United Kingdom. The campaign involved 300 explosions, 10 deaths and 96 injuries.

The IRA Terror Campaign

In the 1970’s there were a series of parcel bombs, car bombs and pub bombings carried out mainly by the Irish Republican Army (IRA), such as the bombing of the Post Office Tower in London on 31 October 1971. A letter bomb sent to the Israeli Embassy in London killed an Israeli Diplomat on 19 September 1972. Black September claimed responsibility for this. The IRA carried out a car bomb in the street outside Old Bailey Court House in 1973, the bombing of Kings Cross Station and Euston Station, 10 September 1973, the M-62 Coach bombing, 4 February 1974, where 8 soldiers and 4 civilians were killed, the bombing of the Houses of Parliament, causing extensive damage and injuring 11 people on 17 June 1974, the Guildford and Woolwich Pub bombings on 5 October 1974, which left 4 soldiers and a civilian dead and 44 injured, a bomb in London, which injured 3 people on 22 October 1974, the premature explosion while planting a bomb at the Coventry Telephone Exchange on 14 November 1974, when James Patrick McDade of the IRA killed himself, the bombing of one of Bristol’s most popular shopping districts, injuring 17 Christmas shoppers on 18 December 1974, the bombing of the Caterham Arms Pub in Surrey, injuring 33 people on 8 August 1975, the assassination of political activist and television personality, Ross McWhirter on 27 November 1975. The IRA bombs in Manchester, Liverpool, Coventry, Bristol and South Hampton, which injured 7 in Bristol on 17 December 1978. The Irish National Liberation Army (INLA) claimed responsibility for the car bombing of Airey Neave as he drove out of the Palace of Westminster car park on 30 March 1979.

IRA Bombing Intensifies

In the 1980's the IRA detonated a bomb outside the Chelsea Barracks, killing 2 and injuring 39 on 10 October 1981, they bombed a Wimpy Bar on Oxford Street on 26 October 1981, which killed the Metropolitan Police Explosives Officer, Kenneth Howorth, as he attempted to defuse it. On 20 July 1982, the IRA killed horses and 11 members of the Household Cavalry and the Royal Green Jackets in Hyde and Regent Park bombings in London. Harrods Department Store was bombed by the IRA on 17 December 1983, killing 6 people and wounding 90 during Christmas shopping. On 12 October 1984, the IRA killed 5 people and injured others in an attempt to kill Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher in the Brighton Hotel Bombing. On 22 September 1989, 11 Royal Marines Bandsmen were killed and 22 injured when the Deal Barracks was bombed by the IRA.

Muslim Terrorism Comes to Britain

Other causes of terrorism in England in the 1980's included: The Iranian Embassy Siege which held the building for 6 days before the hostages were rescued in a raid by the Special Air Service on 30 April 1980. The Pan Am Flight 103 Lockerbie Disaster on 21 December 1988, where a 747 civilian aircraft after taking off from Heathrow was blown up by a suitcase bomb while in flight over Scotland. 270 were killed in this Muslim terrorism attack for which Libya was convicted. On 3 August 1989, Mustafa Mahmoud Mazea blew himself up, along with 2 floors of a central London hotel, while preparing a bomb intended to kill the author, Salman Rushdie.

IRA War Against Britain

In the 1990's the IRA was again the primary cause of terrorism in the British Isles with the bombing on 16 May 1990 at Wembley. The bomb underneath a minibus killed Sargent Charles Chapman of the Queen's Regiment. The Litchfield City Railway Station Shooting by provisional IRA killed 1 soldier and injured 2 on 1 June 1990. The IRA bombing of the London Stock Exchange caused extensive damage on 20 July 1990. Member of Parliament, Ian Gow was killed by a car bomb planted by the IRA while at his home in Sussex on 30 July 1990. On 7 February 1991, the IRA launched 3 mortar shells at the garden of 10 Downing Street. The bomb at Victoria Station on 18 February 1991 injured 38 people and killed one. The Bombing of St. Alban City Centre on 15 November 1991 killed 2 people, both members of the IRA, while attempting to place the bomb. On 28 February 1992, a bomb exploded at London Bridge Station, injuring 29 people.

Targeting the Economy

On 10 April 1992, the Baltic Exchange Bombing in London killed 3 people and caused £800 million worth of damage. On 7 June 1992, IRA terrorist, Paul Magee, shot and killed a police constable. On 25 August 1992, the IRA planted 3 fire-bombs in Shrewsbury, destroying many priceless historic artefacts. There were more IRA bombings in Covent Garden on 12 October 1992, killing one person and injuring 4 others. At Canary Warf a bomb failed to detonate on 16 November 1992. The 3 December 1992 IRA bombs in Central Manchester injured 65 people. The Warrington Bomb Attacks on 20 March 1993, created a huge fireball in the attacks on the Gas works and the second attack on Bridge Street killed 2 children and injured many other people.

Economic Warfare

On 24 April 1993, the IRA detonated a huge truck bomb in the city of London at Bishops Gate, killing a journalist and injuring over 40 people, causing over £1 billion worth of damage, including the destruction of St. Ethelburga's Church and serious damage to the Liverpool Street Tube Station. The insurance payments almost bankrupted Lloyds of London. Four of six bombs planted exploded on 13 August 1993, destroyed a furniture store, more shops and the Bournemouth Pier. The IRA also bombed South Quay area of London, killing 2 people on 9 February 1996.

Failures

A 5 pound bomb placed in a telephone booth on 15 February 1996 was disarmed by the police on Charring Cross Road. An IRA operative killed himself with an improvised high explosive device which detonated prematurely on the bus he was travelling on.

Mindless Destruction

The IRA detonated a 1,500kg bomb in Manchester on 15 June 1996, damaging the Arndale Shopping Centre and injuring over 200 people. In March 1997, IRA detonated 2 bombs in relay boxes near Wilmslow Railway Station, greatly disrupting rail and road services.

Last Attempts by the IRA

In the new millennium the IRA planted a bomb on Hammersmith Bridge in London and on 20 September 2000, fired an RPG at the MI6 HQ in London. A car bomb outside BBC's main centre in London injured one person on

4 March 2001. The IRA bombed Hendon Post Office on 16 April 2001 and detonated a bomb in London postal sorting office on 6 May 2001. The Ealing bombing on 3 August 2001 by the IRA injured 7 people.

Islamic Terrorism Replaces the IRA as the Greatest Threat in the U.K.

It was on 7 July 2005, that the IRA monopoly on bombs in England was taken over by Muslim extremists. Four separate Islamic suicide bombers targeted civilians using the public transport system during the morning rush hour. 3 bombs were detonated in 3 separate trains in London underground and one on a double-decked bus. 56 people were killed and 700 were injured in the worst terrorist incident in the United Kingdom since the 1988 Lockerbie aircraft bombing. 7/7 also marked the first Islamic suicide attacks in the country. ***“Their feet are swift to shed blood; destruction and misery are in their ways; and the way of peace they have not known. There is no fear of God before their eyes.”*** Romans 3:15-18

Blood in the Streets

Since that time, there was the Glasgow International Airport attack on 30 June 2007, where Islamic terrorists injured 5 people. An attempted bombing in Exeter ended with the Muslim terrorist blowing himself up on 22 May 2008. On 22 May 2013, in Woolwich, British soldier, Lee Rigby, was murdered and decapitated in an attack by Michael Adebolajo and Michael Adebowale, two Muslim terrorists armed with a handgun and a number of bladed instruments, including a butcher’s cleaver. On 5 December 2015, Muhaydien Mire shouting ***“This is for Syria!”*** attacked 3 people with a knife in the tube station in East London. Which brings us to this year’s Westminster, Manchester and London attacks by Muslim terrorists. ***“Their feet run to evil and they make haste to shed innocent blood; their thoughts are thoughts of iniquity; wasting and destruction are in their paths.”*** Isaiah 59:7

IRA Terrorists and Muslim Jihadists Have Been Responsible for most Terror Attacks in U.K.

So historically, terrorism and bombing in the British Isles have been overwhelmingly motivated by Roman Catholic Irish Republican Extremists and Muslim Jihadists.

“...Should you help the wicked and love those who hate the Lord? Therefore the wrath of the Lord is upon you.”
2 Chronicles 19:2

Dr. Peter Hammond

Reformation Society

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725

Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021-689-4480

Email: mission@frontline.org.za

Website: www.ReformationSA.org

ZIMBABWE CELEBRATES AS MUGABE FALLS

Unprecedented Jubilation

In Zimbabwe's capital, Harare, parliament was the scene of unprecedented jubilation as the Speaker of the House read Robert Mugabe's resignation letter. The House erupted in cheers, singing, dancing, clapping and celebrations – with Members of the Parliament leaping up, jumping on their chairs and tables, flinging their arms high above their heads, shouting with joy and exuberance.

Euphoria Throughout Zimbabwe

The atmosphere was electric throughout the country as people by the hundreds-of-thousands poured into the streets to cheer, shout, dance and sing at the news.

Dancing in the Streets

There were extraordinary scenes of people dancing, car horns blaring and flags waving with jubilation and singing in the streets. Tuesday, 21 November, will be remembered and celebrated for a very long time in Zimbabwe as the day in which Zimbabwean dictator, Robert Mugabe, finally gave in to decades of protests and pressure to force him to give up his despotic misrule.

Record Breaking Catastrophe

At 93 years old, Robert Mugabe was the oldest and longest-running dictator still in power in the world. For 37 years, the people of Zimbabwe have been brutalised, terrorised and oppressed by his Marxist ZANU-PF reign of terror.

Insulting the Matabele

Earlier this month at a ZANU-PF party rally in Bulawayo, the capital of Matabeleland, Mugabe aggravated the Matabele people by speaking in Shona. As his wife, Grace Mugabe (often called *Gucci Grace* because of her exorbitant lavish lifestyle) was heckled with the people chanting at her: "*You know nothing!*" and singing the Matabele song "*Oyenzayo Siyaizonda*" which translates to: "*We hate what you do!*" Grace responded to the crowd: "*I don't care, I am powerful!*"; "*Even if I become vice president, is there anything wrong with that?*" The people continued to sing: "*We hate what you do!*"

Arrogance and Threats

The visibly incensed Robert Mugabe poured out his wrath on his Vice President, Emmerson Mnangagwa (nicknamed the *crocodile*), publically threatening to fire him. "*If I made a mistake by appointing Mnangagwa... tell me. I will drop him as early as tomorrow. We are not afraid of anyone. We can decide even here!*" Mugabe roared. Mugabe was openly booed by many in the crowd of Matabele in Bulawayo. When Mugabe followed this up by actually sacking his Vice President, Emmerson Mnangagwa, this provoked the Zimbabwe Defence Force (ZDF) to swing into action.

Military Action to Restore the Vice President

On 14 November, armoured personnel carriers rumbled into Harare, the capital of Zimbabwe. The president was taken into what the military described as "*protective custody*". The ZDF secured the public broadcaster and other strategic points. The commander of the armed forces declared that they were "*targeting criminals around Mugabe who are committing crimes that are causing social and economic suffering in the country, in order to bring them to justice.*"

Power Struggle

It was clear that the crisis was caused by the power struggle over who would succeed the 93-year-old dictator. It marked the end of the political ambitions of Mugabe's 52-year-old wife, Grace Mugabe. It was the high profile firing of Vice President Mnangagwa and the purging of party loyalists who did not support Grace Mugabe's aspirations to become the next President that was the final straw.

Assault and Intrigue

Grace Mugabe has been involved in a number of assaults, including in August this year, when she lashed a model with a plug in a hotel in South Africa. The South African ANC government allowed her to claim *diplomatic immunity* and escape prosecution. She has been behind the dismissal of many party favourites of ZANU-PF, including former Vice President, Joice Mujuru.

A Trail of Treachery

Robert Mugabe will be remembered as the Marxist who was propelled into power by Jimmy Carter's State Department and the British Foreign Office, in violation of the Lancaster House Agreement of 1979.

British Betrayal

Lord Arthur Christopher Soames, a son-in-law of Winston Churchill and the British-appointed Governor of Rhodesia during the transition period, was responsible to ensure free and fair elections in accordance with the Lancaster House Agreement. However, while Soames acknowledged that Mugabe's ZANU-PF was engaged in widespread, systematic violations and terrorism, intimidating the voters, he refused to dismiss the obviously fraudulent votes in favour of Mugabe. In blatant violation of the Lancaster House Agreement, Soames handed over the government of Rhodesia to Mugabe and his disqualified terrorist movement, with disastrous consequences to all.

Massacres in Matabeleland

Mugabe mobilised his North Korean Fifth Brigade to conduct wholesale massacres in Matabeleland from 1983 to 1984. Termed *Gukurahundi* (loosely translated from the Shona it refers to "*the early rain which washes away the chaff before the spring rains*"). Mugabe is from the majority Shona tribe and the Matabele are the minority tribe. The Matabele are descendants of the Zulu. Tens-of-thousands of Matabele civilians were brutally massacred by Mugabe's ZANU 5th Brigade.

The Long Fields

Disused mineshafts such as Antelope and Attica Mine were used for dumping many of the bodies of murdered Matabele. Researchers such as Dr. Stuart Doran documented that Robert Mugabe ordered the *Gukurahundi* killings to remove and suppress political opposition within Matabeleland. This was in order to make possible Mugabe's plans to impose a one-party state in 1985.

The 5th Brigade Terror

The members for the 5th Brigade were all ZANU-PF party members drawn from 3,500 ZANLA troops at the Tongogara Assembly point, named after Josiah Tongogara, the ZANLA Commander. Under the command of Colonel Perence Shiri, the North Korean trained 5th Brigade were distinguished by their red berets. All young men in Matabeleland were considered potential dissidents and were summarily detained or executed.

Wholesale Slaughter

Most were shot in front of family and fellow villagers in public executions, after being forced to dig their own graves. Sometimes groups of all ages, including women and children, were shot, such as at Lupane, on the banks of the Cewale River, when 62 were massacred. We know of this massacre because seven victims survived despite severe gun-shot wounds.

Targeting the Matabele

On numerous occasions, large numbers of people were herded into huts and burned alive. This was done in Tsholotsho. The 5th Brigade would routinely round up hundreds of civilians, march them to a central place, such as a school, where they would be forced to sing Shona songs praising ZANU, while they were beaten with sticks and whips. These gatherings usually ended up with public executions. This could be the local chief, or anyone chosen at random.

Breaking the Silence

The *Catholic Commission for Justice and Peace in Zimbabwe* produced a document *Breaking the Silence* with 2,000 names of known Matabele victims of the *Gukurahundi*. In February 1983, the International Red Cross produced documentation of 1,200 Matabele murdered in just that month alone. In 2005, the *International Association of Genocide Scholars* estimated the death toll in Matabeleland as at least 20,000.

Official Admissions

Moven Mahachi, Defence Minister in 1992, became the first ZANU official who acknowledged the execution and torture of civilians by the 5th Brigade. In 1997, former Defence Minister, Enos Enkala, described his involvement with *Gukurahundi* as "*eternal hell*" and blamed president Mugabe for orchestrating it. Even Robert Mugabe speaking at Joshua Nkomo's Memorial service, 2 July 2000, admitted that thousands had been killed during the *Gukurahundi* campaign. "*Hate evil, love good; establish justice in the gate...*" Amos 5:15

Economic Suicide

Mugabe will most be remembered for having implemented the disastrous Socialist policies and land invasions, as well as Zimbabwe's military adventurism in the Congo, which led to the worst hyperinflation ever seen in history. A Hundred Trillion Dollar note could not even buy a quarter of a loaf of bread in 2008 and that was after having

dropped sixteen zeroes from the currency! It became difficult to measure Zimbabwe hyper-inflation because the government of Zimbabwe stopped filing official inflation statistics. However, by November 2008, inflation was estimated at 79.6 billion %! By 2009, Zimbabwe abandoned its own currency and began using the United States Dollar, South African Rand and Botswanan Pula.

Looting the Whole Country

The destruction of savings, earnings and pensions was absolutely catastrophic, destroying lifetimes of savings and earnings. Yet, while it destroyed the livelihood of most Zimbabweans, it made many of the ZANU-PF elite spectacularly wealthy. *“For I, the Lord, love justice; I hate robbery...”* Isaiah 61:8

From Bread Basket to Basket Case

Mugabe also managed to take a country which had been a bread basket of Africa to the basket case of Africa. He turned the paradise of Rhodesia into the hell of Zimbabwe. He took a country which had flourished even under International sanctions and in the midst of a vicious war against Soviet and Red Chinese backed terrorists, into a failed state and that even with massive International Foreign Aid! Under Mugabe, Zimbabwe collapsed into economic chaos with over 85% unemployment. More than half of the total population voted with their feet by fleeing the country.

Obscene Opulence and Extravagant Excesses

Despite Zimbabwe becoming one of the poorest countries in the world, Robert Mugabe became one of the wealthiest people in the world with a personal net worth of well over US \$1 Billion. Mugabe owns the Zimbabwe Consolidated Diamond Company which has allowed Red China to strip the country of its natural assets. In 2001, Wikileaks estimated Robert Mugabe's net worth as US \$1.75 Billion invested as far afield as Switzerland, the Channel Islands and the Bahamas to castles in Scotland. At his 90th birthday celebrations, Mugabe boasted of dining on elephant and lion meat! The obscene extravagance of Mugabe, his wives and sons, is in stark contrast with the destitution of most of the people suffering under his maladministration.

Converted to Communism

Mugabe has described his political ideology as Marxist Leninism. He was educated at Kutama College and University of Fort Hare. Then he worked as a school teacher in Rhodesia and Ghana. Mugabe testified that it was the scholarship he received in 1949 to study at the University at Fort Hare in South Africa that led to his involvement in politics. He joined the African National Congress and was introduced to Marxist ideas by Jewish South African communists. He described his time at Fort Hare as the *“turning point”* in his life. Mugabe was convicted of sedition and imprisoned between 1964 and 1974 during which time he studied further. Released in the 1974 Amnesty, he moved to Mozambique to oversee ZANU's Revolutionary terrorism campaign.

How Liberators Become Oppressors

Elections in Zimbabwe have been dominated by state violence and blatant electoral fraud. Even when defeated, such as in the 2002, 2008 and 2013 presidential elections, Mugabe stayed in power and continued to brutalise and terrorise the population that he claimed to serve. *“How long will the land lie parched and the grass in every field be withered? Because those who live in it are wicked, the animals and birds have perished...”* Jeremiah 12:4

How to Destroy Any Economy

As Robert Guest, the African Editor of *The Economist*, observed in his book, *The Shackled Continent*: *“For half a century now, the continent has been deluged with Foreign Aid, but this aid has failed to make Africa any less poor... it has bankrolled tyrants... or idealists with hopeless economic policies... both types of aid have been wasted... doing business in Africa can be tricky. Bad roads, punctured by road blocks, manned by bribe-hungry policemen, make it slow and costly to move goods, even short distances... local firms, meanwhile, have been held back by arbitrary government regulations, dysfunctional legal systems and the difficulty, without political connections, of raising capital... if Africa was better governed it would be richer... Africans are poor, largely because they are not yet free. They live under predatory, incompetent governments which... impoverish them in many ways: through corruption, through bad economic policies and sometimes, as in Zimbabwe, by creating an atmosphere of terror...”* *“They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves of depravity...”* 2 Peter 2:19

The Fall of Mugabe is Not Necessarily the End of the Oppression in Zimbabwe

We cannot anticipate too much change in policy as Mnangagwa was a loyal Mugabe henchman until very recently. He has been complicit in all the crimes of the Mugabe ZANU-PF gangsters over the last 37 years. Those that think only Mugabe has been the problem, do not understand the insidious role of communism. After Vladimir Lenin, there was Stalin, then Khrushchev, then Brezhnev and so on. Mugabe is just one of many Marxist mass-

murdering thugs available to ZANU-PF. ***“Deliver me, O my God, out of the hand of the wicked, out of the hand of the unrighteous and cruel man.”*** Psalm 71:4

Freedom Requires the Eradication of Communism and Corruption

Although the regime governing Zimbabwe will try to make it appear that freedom has come, to entice investment, which they can overtax and later confiscate, things are bound to continue to deteriorate until the people of Zimbabwe rise up to overthrow the whole communist structure and uproot its destructive ideology which has permeated and poisoned the country. ***“Destructive forces are at work in the city; threats and lies never leave its streets.”*** Psalm 55:11

Desperate for Hope and Real Change

However, the masses of people who have turned out in the hundreds-of-thousands to celebrate the downfall of Robert Mugabe, are desperate for hope and real change. We need to continue to pray and to work for Biblical Reformation and spiritual Revival. ***“When justice is done, it brings joy to the righteous but terror to evildoers.”*** Proverbs 21:15

Serving the Suffering

Frontline Fellowship has been dedicated to missionary work in Zimbabwe since 1982. For over 35 years, we have been distributing Bibles and Bible teaching materials, conducting Leadership Training Seminars, Evangelism Workshops, ministering in schools, prisons, hospitals, in the streets and market places, seeking to lay solid Biblical foundations for long-term Biblical Reformation.

“See, I have set before you today life and good, death and evil, in that I command you today to love the Lord your God, to walk in His ways, and to keep His commandments, His statutes, and His judgments, that you may live and multiply; and the Lord your God will bless you in the land which you go to possess. But if your heart turns away so that you do not hear, and are drawn away, and worship other gods and serve them, I announce to you today that you shall surely perish; you shall not prolong your days in the land which you cross over the Jordan to go in and possess. I call heaven and earth as witnesses today against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing; therefore choose life, that both you and your descendants may live.”
Deuteronomy 30:15-19

Dr. Peter Hammond

Reformation Society

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725

Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021-689-4480

Email: mission@frontline.org.za

Website: www.ReformationSA.org

FARMS AND FREEDOMS UNDER FIRE IN SOUTH AFRICA

Farm Confiscations without Compensation

The National Assembly of the South African Parliament sent shock waves around the country by setting in motion a process to change the Constitution so as to allow expropriation of land without compensation. The threat to private ownership of property and the clearly stated intention to remove Constitutional safeguards and protections for private ownership of property has staggered observers. Most land in South Africa is controlled by the ANC government and over 4,000 farms already acquired from white farmers, remain unallocated.

Theft by Majority Vote

The motion was adopted with a vote of 241 in support and only 83 against. The African National Congress (ANC) and Economic Freedom Front (EFF) voted for the motion and the Democratic Alliance (DA), Freedom Front (FF), Congress of the People Party (COPE) and the African Christian Democratic Party (ACDP) voted against.

Cheap Politics to Win Votes

One time ANC leader, Mosiuoa Lekota, now leader of COPE, condemned the EFF's tactics as *"imbecilic, racist attacks."* and the vote *"misleading our people for cheap popularity just to win votes."*

A False Narrative

"The notion of a "stolen land" is a false narrative. We call on the ANC to pronounce themselves unambiguously as to whether they have now changed historical policy and abandoned the Freedom Charter in favour of the racist rhetoric of both the EFF and the PAC."

Cutting their Throats

EFF leader, Julius Malema declared that he wanted to hit white men hard *"We are cutting the throat of whiteness."*

Madness and Insanity

DA leader, Mmusi Maimane condemned the EFF for its destructive racial policies: *"It is madness. It is insane."*

Economic Suicide

Considering the catastrophic consequences of communist land reform in neighbouring Zimbabwe, it seems inexplicable that the ANC government of South Africa would want to follow in the footsteps of failure by committing Economic Suicide.

Completely in Violation of Law

London Barrister, Malcolm Horne, commented on the planned land grab in South Africa, *"You cannot have land expropriation without compensation. It is illegal under international law. It is contrary to a dozen treaties that South Africa has signed and ratified. As such, it is a principal that is also enshrined in South African domestic law. You cannot change the Constitution, therefore, to make it legal. Treaty Law is superior law. It always applies."*

"To the Law and to the testimony! If they do not speak according to this Word, it is because there is no light in them." Isaiah 8:20

Following in the Footsteps of Failure

When Patrice Lumumba violated the constitution and laws of the Congo with nationalisations, the result was carnage, civil war and total economic collapse. Nationalisation of industries and farms in Zambia and Tanzania brought economic collapse to those countries as well. However, vast amounts of Western foreign aid kept the countries somewhat afloat, although the vast majority of the aid was stolen by corruption from the governments themselves.

From Exporting Food to Starvation

When Mozambique was granted independence by Portugal in 1975, Samora Machel of Frelimo confiscated all private property and completely destroyed what was once a vibrant economy. Before independence, Mozambique exported food. After Frelimo's revolution, more than a million Mozambiquans died of starvation and the country was torn apart by a vicious civil war.

Ignoring Warnings

At independence in Zimbabwe, 1980, Mozambique's Samora Machel and Tanzania's Julius Nyerere, actually warned Robert Mugabe not to make the same mistakes they had done. They urged him to respect property

rights and let the Europeans continue to contribute to the economy. When Mugabe began threatening the white farmers, most media comment was, that there should be no concern because Mugabe was “*an intelligent person*” and knew that dispossessing the farmers would be a catastrophe for the country.

Destroying the Economy

Nevertheless, Mugabe’s ZANU-PF government did seize over 5,000 commercial farms and evicted the white farmers, who in many cases, were third or fourth generation citizens, who had literally carved the farms out of the wilderness.

Applauding Self-Destructive Insanity

Even as Zimbabwe’s economy collapsed and more than half of the total population fled the country – voting with their feet a vote of no confidence in Marxist Mugabe, most African leaders applauded and cheered Mugabe! Previous South African ANC president, Thabo Mbeki, unquestioningly backed Mugabe’s disastrous policies in Zimbabwe and helped keep the country from complete bankruptcy through regular aid and electricity from South Africa.

Desperate for Hope

The fall of Jacob Zuma and rise to power of Cyril Ramaphosa, in South Africa, was accompanied by a wave of euphoria and many Christians declaring: “*We are saved!*”; “*A new day is dawning!*”; “*Now we can begin to rebuild our country!*”; “*Our prayers have been answered!*”...

Ominous Announcement

Yet, in his opening State of the Nation address to Parliament, Cyril Ramaphosa announced: “*We will seize land without compensation!*” This was greeted with the loudest and most sustained applause of his address. Considering that South Africa provides sanctuary to more than 10 million refugees who have fled endemic misrule to the North, imploding food security in South Africa will affect far more than our own population.

Disastrous Decline of Agriculture

In 1994 when Nelson Mandela became president of South Africa, we had 70,000 white commercial farmers who were feeding over 100 million people throughout Africa. Today, we have barely 28,000 farmers left who are able to feed 40 million people. However, South Africa’s population is already in excess of 50 million. Even as the population of the country has doubled since 1994, our food production is less than 40% of what it was in 1994.

Economic Disaster

The food crisis in Africa is about to get much worse. So is the refugee crisis. The ANC government has been a complete failure on every level. In 1994, the Rand was close to R2 to the Dollar. Today it is around R12 to the Dollar. Unemployment in 1994 was under 3 million. Today unemployment in South Africa is closer to 30 million. For every year the ANC has been in power, they have added another million unemployed people to the ranks of the unemployed. Power failures, water restrictions, rampant crime, rape and murder have become every day realities for the long-suffering people of South Africa.

Smokescreens to Distract from Corruption and Failure

To distract citizens from the disastrous failure and catastrophic corruption of the ANC government, lies, distortions, disinformation, fabrications, misleading statistics and campaigns of guilt manipulation have been manufactured to create a smoke screen to cover the rampant corruption and incompetence of the ANC. To enable the looting of the country, whites have been demonised and made scapegoats for every problem in the country. Even after more than 23 years of ANC rule, nothing is accepted as their fault. Instead irresponsible politicians have engaged in the most reckless rabble-rousing and hate-mongering which threaten to subvert the very fabric of society.

Racist Policies Undermine the Country

At his presidential inauguration in 1994, Nelson Mandela declared: “*Never, never, never again will any South African be discriminated against on the basis of their race.*” This was immediately followed by Affirmative Action, Black Economic Empowerment and racial quotas, which only succeeded in chasing away investors, employers, entrepreneurs and tourists, which caused increasing unemployment.

Hell-Bent on Destroying the Country

Instead of redressing their failed policies, the ANC has continued to throw good money after bad, hell-bent on promoting immoral, unwise and counter-productive policies on every level. Now, heedless to the warning of the catastrophic *dekulakisation* land reform policy of Josef Stalin in the Ukraine and Soviet Union in the 1930s, the holocaust in Rwanda of 1994 and catastrophic land reform policies of Zimbabwe, the ANC now want to

remove Constitutional protections on private ownership of property. They want to be able to expropriate farms without even compensation for the farmers who have poured generations of sacrifice and hard work into cultivating the wilderness and turning them into productive farms.

How to Chase Away Investors

If they go ahead with this ill-advised policy, it will not only undermine the food security of South Africa, but greatly increase unemployment and chase away investors, employers, entrepreneurs and tourists. The economic consequences and social catastrophe that would result from such a racist and lawless policy would be incalculable. It would represent the final breaking of faith with the reconciliation settlement made in 1994. Violating solemn international agreements and destroying the very Bill of Rights, which was meant to be the foundation for prosperity and progress in this country, will have catastrophic repercussions. One cannot violate private ownership of property without destroying the essential foundation for all effective economies.

Blind Hatred will Have Disastrous Consequences

It would appear that insane hatred will destroy this great country and the last chance for Africa to show a viable and successful working economy to the world. The disgrace that this would be to Africa as a whole and the disillusionment it would create amongst those who have poured their hearts and souls into building Africa up, would be catastrophic. South Africa would join the long list of failed African states. Yet another warning to outsiders to not even try to invest in a continent that cannot respect private ownership of property, nor honour solemn agreements, bills or rights and international treaties.

Raising Questions

So, is emotion to replace reason?

Are slogans to overwhelm debate?

Is expropriation to supercede economics?

Are *toi toi* zombie dances to replace work?

Is race hatred to replace good neighbourliness?

If settlers who came centuries ago and cultivated the wilderness are to be called colonists and invaders, are black migrants to Europe, America, Australia and South Africa, also to be called invaders and colonialists?

The Victim Card Has Been Overplayed

Villifying the victims and villains playing the victim card may work for a time, but ultimately it will come back to destroy the one playing this dangerous game.

National Suicide

The malicious destruction of so many historic places, monuments, graves, churches, homes and even entire forests, is the path of national suicide. Destruction for the sake of it, envy, greed, hatred and jealousy do not build the kind of society any of us would want to live in. ***“Hate evil, love good; establish justice in the gate.... let justice run down like water and righteousness like a mighty stream.”*** Amos 5:15,24

Questions which Must be Asked

This ill-advised policy of expropriating land without compensation is based upon a broad propaganda narrative of *righting the wrongs of long ago* and *taking back that which was stolen*. In a word, restitution. But who stole the land? Where was it stolen? From whom was it stolen? When was it stolen? How was it stolen?

Facts Ruin a Good Story

The Fact is that the Dutch settlers and Voortrekkers **purchased** their land and settled and **developed** the wilderness at great personal sacrifice. Truth does not fear investigation. Facts can ruin a good story. Marxist Revolutionaries and agitators use propaganda to whip up hatred for their political ends.

The Real Theft

However, if we were to consider the real theft taking place in our time, we would recognise that no one has stolen more from us than our own government has. **The greatest theft is from inflation, taxation and corruption.** The African Union calculates that over 25% of the Gross Domestic Product (GDP) of Africa is stolen every year by governments in Africa. That is more than 10 times (1000%) of all the foreign aid received by Africa every year. ***“While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption...”*** 2 Peter 2:19

Eradicating Corruption Would Enrich Everyone

If we could cut corruption down by just 10%, it would equal all the foreign aid poured into Africa each year. Imagine if we could eradicate 50% of the corruption! Imagine eradicating over 90% of the corruption!

Taxation, Corruption and Inflation Steals from Everyone

Inflation has devalued the South African Rand to one five hundredth what it was back in 1980. The theft of so much of our hard work and ingenuity by exorbitant taxation and rampant corruption by the ANC government is vastly greater than all other causes of poverty combined. Over R1 Trillion is lost to corruption in South Africa - every year. ***“Shall I count pure those with the wicked scales and with the bag of deceitful weights? For her rich men are full of violence, her inhabitants have spoken lies and their tongue is deceitful in their mouth.”*** Micah 6:11-12

Reject the Distractions

How long are we going to accept the smoke-screens, scape-goats, distractions and disinformation of the criminals who are ruining this country? The middle letters of Cancer are ANC.

Incompetence Subverts our Economy

Power cuts by Eskom, between 2008 and 2015, cost the South African economy over R300 Billion. The additional diesel costs of Eskom to run their power stations due to their *“human error”* at Koeberg Nuclear Power Station in 2015, was estimated to be over R250 million per week! Stage 3 *load shedding* was estimated to cost the South African economy R80 Billion per month!

Water Restrictions Chase Away Tourists

The severe water restrictions in Cape Town have led to a drastic decrease in the number of international tourists visiting the city. Last year tourism accounted for 9% of South Africa's economy (USD\$35 Billion). 87% of small business in Cape Town have reported losing half their revenue due to water restrictions. Water Resource Partners (WRP) estimated that 30% of South Africa's water in urban areas is wasted through leakages. Soweto residents have reported that major water delivery pipes have been leaking for years, without the municipality repairing them!

Dysfunctional Schools

With the catastrophic failure of government in education, there has been a dramatic increase in private and independent schools which do not receive any tax rebates, despite taking an enormous amount of pressure and expense off state budgets. Hence, parents supporting private schools and home schooling still have to pay through their taxes for state education without receiving any kind of tax rebate for not making use of the state facilities.

War Against Whites

The war on whites in South Africa is also seen in economics through Black Economic Empowerment/ Affirmative Action job reservation, racial quotas. All of which are designed to keep whites and particularly white males out of government and commercial employment. But the violent, vicious and brutally sadistic tortures and murders of farmers and their family members defies description. Farm attacks in South Africa are 700% higher than in any other country in the world.

The Most Dangerous Job in the World

Farmers are being murdered at a rate that is over 4 times more than the murder of police. White South African farmers are experiencing the highest rates of violent crime anywhere in the world. AfriForum has noted that the term *“farm murders”* is misleading and the term *“farm terror”* and *“farm tortures”* are more suitable. Farmers in South Africa are being murdered at a rate of 220 per 100,000 per year. The average murder ratio per 100,000 of the population worldwide is 9. Any form of justice is incredibly rare. The criminal justice system is failing spectacularly to effectively prosecute most of the perpetrators of these attacks.

Sadistic Savagery

Farming family victims are often tied up, cut with machetes and pitchforks, burned with boiling water or hot irons, dragged behind vehicles, raped and mutilated in incomprehensible savagery. The South African Agricultural Union recorded 10,151 farm attacks and 1,541 murders between 1994 and 2008. The Transvaal Agricultural Union recorded 2,070 attacks and 1,266 murders between 1991 and 2009. The South African Chamber of Commerce and Industry calculated that every farm murder, or attack cost the South African economy over R2 million annually. (This figure was based on the annual contribution of the Agricultural sector to the country's Gross Domestic Product.)

“Bury Them Alive!”

When Freedom Front member of parliament, Peter Groenewald, reported on the horrific tortures being inflicted on white farmers in South Africa today, an ANC member of parliament jeered and shouted *“Bury them alive!”* ***“Destruction is in its midst; oppression and deceit do not depart from its streets.”*** Psalm 55:11

Hate Speech

AfriForum has documented multiple cases of incitement to genocide and other menacing threats against whites on social media, including: ANC councillor, Bhekinkosi Mvelase: *“Kill the Boer, kill the farmer!”* Velaphi Khumalo of the Gauteng Arts and Culture Department: *“I want to cleanse this country of all white people. White people in South Africa deserve to be hacked and killed. You must be bushed alive and skinned and your offspring be used as garden fertilizer.”* Luvuyo Maxmenziwa: *“I hate white people... just get me a bazooka or AK47 so I can do the right thing and kill these demon possessed humans.”*

“Do not remove the ancient landmark which your fathers have set.” Proverbs 22:28

Propaganda Kills

Here follows a compilation of quotes and policies from ANC leaders: *“All white people are criminals and should be treated as such. We need to take their property, deny them job opportunities and treat them as second class citizens. White people are rapists, dogs and cowards. We need to sing songs about how they should be mowed down and murdered. White people are in the minority and that means they must have fewer rights than the rest of us. Absolutely, that is how democracy works and if they dare to protest against these views, we must tell them to keep their mouths shut because they are racists who are simply getting what they deserve.”*

“Woe to those who call evil good and good evil... who justify the wicked for a bribe and take away justice from the righteous man!” Isaiah 5:20-23

So What Can We Do?

We need to do something. This is first and foremost an information war. We need to **be informed**. **“My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge...”** Hosea 4:6.

Resources to Set the Record Straight

Obtain and read [Sketches from South African History](#), [Biblical Principles for Africa](#), [Renaissance or Reformation](#) and obtain the [Agenda 2](#) and [Bitter Harvest](#) DVDs. Good audio MP3 resources, include: [South African History Boxset](#) and [War Against God MP3](#). Visit the [Henry Morton Stanley School of Christian Journalism](#) website and [Facebook](#) page and [Africa Christian Action](#) website and [Facebook](#) page and [Young Reformers Out to Change the World](#) Facebook page. **“Do not be afraid of sudden terror, nor of trouble from the wicked when it comes; for the Lord will be your confidence and will keep your foot from being caught.”** Proverbs 3:25-26

Information, Intercession, Involvements and Investment

We need to **be interceding**. We need to **be involved** in practical action. We need to **invest** in workable solutions and we need to implement workable strategies for security and survival. **“A prudent man foresees evil...”** Proverbs 27:12

Be Prepared

Pray. Publish. Prepare. Protest. We need to stand up, speak out and step out. We need to be armed and alert. Stock up supplies. Have back up plans. Secure your home and farm, church and mission. Prepare for lawlessness, power failures, water mains being cut, know your neighbours, help one another, as there is strength in unity. **“Watch, stand fast in the Faith, be brave, be strong.”** 1 Corinthians 16:13

Practical Steps Each One of Us Can Take

We need to speak up on community radio phone-in programmes, write letters and articles for your local community newspapers, contribute to, or set up websites, blogs and social media that will deal with these issues. Organise public meetings and film screenings, such as [Agenda 2](#) and [Bitter Harvest](#). Obtain the [Security and Survival Handbook](#) and implement its practical solutions.

Rescue, Redeem, Restore, Reform and Revive

We need to rescue, redeem, restore, reform and revive. Help build community support structures. Support civic defence, neighbourhood watch organisations. Get networked. Work for decentralisation. Support Independence for the Cape movement. Contact Die Suidlanders. Find groups in your area that you can network with for both information and mutual support.

“...Do not be afraid of them. Remember the Lord, great and awesome and fight for your brethren, your sons, your daughters, your wives and your houses.” Nehemiah 4:14

Dr. Peter Hammond

Chapter 26

IS SOUTH AFRICA ENTERING THE SECOND PHASE OF THE REVOLUTION?

“The words of his mouth were smoother than butter, but war was in his heart; his words were softer than oil, yet they were drawn swords.” Psalm 55:21

Ominous Announcement

Does the announcement by new ANC president, Cyril Ramaphosa, regarding the ANC’s determination to confiscate land from white South Africans “*without compensation*” signal a Second Phase of the Revolution?

The Reign of Terror in France

The French Revolution plainly had two phases. The **First Phase** of the Revolution was seizing political control. The **Second Phase** of the Revolution, also called *the Reign of Terror*, sought the radical transformation of every aspect of French society. It was a Cultural Revolution, a religious Revolution and a social and economic Revolution. The Second phase of the Revolution in France involved seizing control over every area of life, including churches, schools and farms. 40,000 people were beheaded on the guillotine in the Reign of Terror and another 300,000 were executed by firing squads, drownings and other means. France was plunged into 25 years of constant warfare which devastated much of Europe.

The Bolshevik Revolution in Russia

The Bolshevik Revolution of 1917 seized political control of the country from the Duma (parliament) of Russia. 12 years later, in December 1929, Soviet dictator, Joseph Stalin announced: “*The liquidation of the Kulaks as a class... now we have the opportunity to carry out a resolute offensive against the Kulaks, break the resistance, eliminate them...*” The Kulaks were farmers. *Dekulakisation* was presented as “*land reform.*” The official state newspaper “*Pravda*” declared: “*In order to eliminate the Kulaks as a class, the resistance of this class must be smashed in open battle and it must be deprived of the productive sources of its existence and development (free use of land, instruments of production, land renting, right to hire labour, etc.) that is the term towards the policy of eliminating the Kulaks as a class.*”

Dekulakisation – Land Reform in Ukraine

Under this *Dekulakisation* policy, 18 million peasants lost their homes and farms, millions were deported to Siberia and up to 11 million Ukrainians died in the massacres and resultant man-made starvation between 1929 and 1936. This came to be called the Holodomor. Also known as the Great Famine and the Ukrainian Genocide of 1932 to 1933. The word Holodomor literally translated from Ukrainian means: “*death by hunger*”, “*to kill by hunger*”, or “*to starve to death.*”

The Holodomor

Holodomor is a compound of the Ukrainian words *holod*, meaning hunger and *mor*, meaning plague. The 2017 film [*Bitter Harvest*](#) dramatizes the horrors of the Soviet Holodomor in Ukraine. [*The Black Book of Communism*](#) provides further documentation of this systematic extermination of the farmers in Ukraine, which was once called “*the bread basket of Europe.*”

The Great Purge

This was followed by the Great Purge or Great Terror in which over 950,000 Russians were killed by the Soviet Secret Police, the NKVD. This included many communist party members and government officials and many officers of the Red Army. Ultimately even Leon Trotsky (Born Levi Davidovich Bronstein) the Soviet “*hero of the Revolution*” and Head of the Red Army, was assassinated 20 August 1940, with an ice axe.

Revolutionaries Eventually Become Cannibalistic

Ultimately, Revolutionaries turn on one another and that has been true in every Revolution. [*Robespierre*](#), the prototype Revolutionary of the French Revolution, ended up beheaded on the very guillotine that he had condemned so many others to.

Revolutionaries in Zimbabwe Assassinate Rivals

Robert Mugabe had Josiah Magama Tongogara, the Commander of the ZANLA guerrilla army assassinated 26 December 1979. Many had expected Tongogara to be the first president of Zimbabwe, with Robert Mugabe, the head of ZANLA’s political wing, ZANU, as prime minister. The strategic removal of Tongogara left the path to the presidency open for Mugabe.

Revolutionaries in Mozambican Remove Rivals

Similarly, Eduardo Mondlane, the founding president of Mozambican Liberation Front (FRELIMO) was

assassinated in 1969 by a parcel bomb in FRELIMO headquarters in Dar es Salaam, Tanzania, to make way for Samora Machel.

False Flag Assassination

Although South African Communist Party leader, Chris Hani's assassination 10 April 1993 was blamed on Polish citizen, Janusz Waluś and South African Conservative Party leader, Clive Derby-Lewis, ANC leaders Bantu Holomisa and Winnie Mandela, both claimed that it was actually "*an inside job*" in order to remove the obvious favourite for Deputy President of the ANC under Mandela and make way for Thabo Mbeki and Jacob Zuma. Winnie Mandela claimed that the ANC bodyguards were removed from Hani for the day of the assassination.

Revolution in China

The Communist Revolution of Red China in 1949 was followed by the Great Leap Forward in 1958 and by a second phase of the Revolution from 1966 to 1976. This second phase of the Revolution or the Cultural Revolution in China included massive seizures of property, wide spread "*land reform*", confiscation without compensation, public humiliation ceremonies of religious and cultural leaders, arbitrary imprisonment, torture, hard labour and mass executions. It is calculated that over 69 million people died in this Second phase of the Revolution in China.

The Cultural Revolution

The Cultural Revolution in China also included purging the party of any deemed disloyal - which even included the president Liu Shaoqi and General Lou Ruiqing. Mao Tse Tung mobilised his Red Guards to sweep into every farm and village of the vast country to purge "*reactionaries*", "*counter revolutionaries*" and all others not deemed sufficiently enthusiastic for the Revolution. The result was the destruction of thousands of years of culture and crippling the country economically. It impoverished China intellectually and culturally. Mao was able to mobilise the young *Red Guards* for this destructive campaign because they had never known life in nationalist China and had been effectively indoctrinated in the state schools with Marxist propaganda and Mao's *Little Red Book*.

Revolution in Cuba

Cuba also had a second phase of the Revolution, where Fidel Castro openly admitted his communist roots and ambitions, which included nationalisation of all industries and all agriculture. The courts of law were replaced with People's Tribunals and the creation of what he called "*a workers state*."

Revolution in Zimbabwe

In Zimbabwe the second phase of the Revolution was launched approximately 20 years after the signing of the Lancaster House Agreement, which led to the transfer of power under guarantees of private ownership of property, the rule of law, separation of powers and legal safeguards. Despite massive foreign aid from Britain, America and the EU, Mugabe's ZANU government failed to provide the vast amount of land at their own disposal to be productively farmed.

National Suicide

In order to distract their citizens from the gross failure of government, they blamed the economic woes of the country on the white farmers and unleashed a wave of violent farm invasions which led to the total collapse of the Zimbabwean economy, the worst hyperinflation ever seen in history. Even after deleting 16 zeros from the currency, a Hundred Trillion Dollar note in 2008 could not even buy half a loaf of bread. One brick in 2008 cost more than every home, business, farm and property in all of Zimbabwe in 1980. The national suicide of Zimbabwe under the Mugabe dictatorship led to more than half of the total population fleeing the country. Unemployment rocketed to over 90% of those left behind in the country.

The ANC's Strategy for a Second Transition in South Africa

In 2012, the National Policy Conference of the African National Congress (ANC) adopted the policy document: "*The Second Transition – Building a National Democratic Society and the balance of forces*." This watershed document in preparation for the 53rd African National Congress National Conference in 2012 was saturated with talk of "*Revolution*", "*transformation*", "*transforming the economy*"; "*ideological work and the battle of ideas*"; "*social transformation*" and "*mass mobilisation and organisation*." The document speaks of "*armed struggle*", "*activism of a revolutionary end*", "*disciplined cadre ship*", "*the eradication of the legacy of colonialism and apartheid and the liberation of the country for national and all other forms of discrimination. The democratic consolidation of the creation of a country... the transformation of gender relations with men and women making a contribution to society as equals. The Revolutionary transformation of South African society by... a Revolutionary people's movement and an agent for progressive change...*"

The EFF – Vanguard of the Revolution

Interestingly, one year later, on 26 July 2013, the Economic Freedom Fighters (EFF) was launched by one time president of the African National Congress Youth League (ANCYL), Julius Malema. Generally considered as a radical break away from and opposition to the ANC, there are many who regard the EFF as a deception operation intricately co-ordinated with the ANC for bringing about the second phase of the Revolution.

Launching the Second Phase of the Revolution in South Africa

The EFF is described as communist, Marxist-Leninist, anti-capitalist, pan-Africanist and black-supremacist. Yet, when EFF's Malema proposed in parliament to begin the process of amending the country's constitution to allow for the confiscation of white-owned land "without compensation", the motion was passed by an overwhelming 241 votes to 83 against. All the ANC and EFF members of parliament unitedly supported the motion. If the EFF was a genuine opposition to and competition to the ANC, every Member of Parliament of the ANC would not have supported any measure proposed by the leader of the EFF who they claim is a traitor who defected from them.

What Can Be Done to Resist the Second Phase of the Revolution?

So, what does the future hold and what can be done to resist and derail this planned second phase of the Revolution?

1. First of all we need to **be informed**. "*My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge...*" Hosea 4:6. The ANC Policy Document of 2012 itself refers to "*the ideological struggle*" and "*the battle of ideas*." We need to resist the indoctrination and disinformation campaign of state schools, state textbooks and state controlled media, which is thoroughly anti-Christian and is maliciously stirring up race hatred and laying foundations for genocide against whites in South Africa.

We need to **support responsible, balanced, independent sources of news**, including independent community radio stations, newsletters and magazines and reliable websites. I would recommend that those wanting to understand how revolutions work need to obtain Otto Scott's landmark book: [*Robespierre – Inside the French Revolution*](#), the [*Agenda 2*](#) DVD documentary and view the dramatic film [*Bitter Harvest*](#) on the Holodomor in Ukraine. Also, read [*Farms and Freedom Under Fire in South Africa*](#), [*Nine Stages of Genocide in South Africa*](#) and [*Fearless Farmers Who Fight Back*](#) on the www.hmsschoolofchristianjournalism.org website.

We need to **mobilise prayer and action**. Prayer is an integral and essential foundation for action. We need to establish prayer groups, prayer chains and prayer networks, to seek God for Revival, work for Reformation and restoration of spiritual life and apply Scriptural principles to all areas of life. Obtain the [*Power of Prayer Handbook*](#). Pray the Psalms.

We need **involvement**. We need to enlist qualified help, mobilise our friends, family and neighbours to mutual support and resistance to the lawless, reckless and dangerous strategies of the Marxist revolutionaries threatening us. Get armed, trained and prepared to defend your family, friends and neighbours. Obtain the [*Security and Survival Handbook*](#). "*Who will rise up for me against the evildoers? Who will stand up for me against the workers of iniquity?*" Psalm 94:16

The Catastrophe of Communism

Communism has proved to be a catastrophe. It is the worst disaster and the greatest killer in history. It is outrageous that, in this day and age, anyone could be a Marxist-Leninist. Socialism has never achieved a better standard of life for its adherents. The high sounding ideals of the socialists have consistently turned into nightmares which millions of its long-suffering people have used extraordinary ingenuity to endeavour to escape from.

Voting with their Feet

Millions have succeeded against all odds in escaping through and across the Iron Curtain and behind the Berlin Wall, or across the shark infested waters from Cuba. The millions of people voting with their feet, fleeing from Marxist oppression and land reform, such as in Zimbabwe, should be sufficient warning to those who believe that in promoting the socialist ideals they are actually working for a better future. "*While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption...*" 2 Peter 2:19

Do Not Be Deceived

Communist revolutionaries actually do not care about the masses that they cheerfully use as cannon fodder and naïve foot soldiers for their Revolution. A study of history and of the disastrous track record of the second phase of the Revolution should be sufficient to disillusion any cadre.

"...Should you help the wicked and love those who hate the Lord?

Therefore the wrath of the Lord is upon you." 2 Chronicles 19:2

Dr. Peter Hammond

Reformation Society

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725 Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021-689-4480

mission@frontline.org.za www.ReformationSA.org www.livingstonefellowship.co.za

www.christianaction.org.za www.hmsschoolofchristianjournalism.org

FRAUD, FAILURE AND FARCE – LAND EXPROPRIATION HEARINGS

“...‘We have made a covenant with death and with Sheol we are in agreement. When the overflowing scourge passes through, it will not come to us, for we have made lies our refuge and under falsehood we have hidden ourselves.’” Isaiah 28:15

Agitprop Active Measures at Work

Those of us who attended the parliamentary hearings regarding the African National Congress (ANC) government’s plans to confiscate farms, were given a classic example of how communist agitprop (agitation-propaganda) active measures works.

Bussed-in Party Agitators

Huge crowds of uniformed EFF (Economic Freedom Fighters) and ANC (African National Congress) rent-a-mobs were being bussed-in hours before the event even began. There was a party atmosphere (in more ways than one) and the venue (a large Apostolic Faith Mission Church) was strewn with litter. The disruptive mobs made it hard for any Capetonians to access the venue to give verbal testimony to the parliamentary sub-committee gathered there. Hundreds were not even able to get through the door and milled around outside, including members of City council, etc.

Confusion in Communications and Changed Venue

Parliament had originally been advertised as the venue for the hearings, but barely a day before the event, a new venue was announced, leading to much confusion. Considering how many municipal buildings and city halls and how parliament itself was available to the government, it is inexplicable why they had to rent a church venue. Except, perhaps, that they would prefer to have a church venue trashed by their rent-a-mob than a government building.

Free Food for Agitprop Rent-A-Mob

It was then pointed out that this venue was ideal for the purposes of the EFF and ANC as it was just across the road from a KFC and MacDonald’s. Reportedly, many of the EFF and ANC rent-a-mob members had been promised free KFC lunches and from the vast amounts of fast-food litter strewn around the grounds of the church after lunch that certainly seemed to be the case.

Time Constraints

Considering that each citizen who wanted to give verbal testimony was limited to 3 minutes each and that five hours had been allocated (from 11am to 4pm), a maximum of 100 people could have spoken. As it was, with the delays and disruptions, something less than 80 out of over 2,000 people who were crammed into the church were able to be given any kind of hearing.

Parliamentary Hearings Regulations

Kicking off the Hearing, the Chairman of the proceedings informed everyone that this was a sitting of parliament and therefore everyone needed to behave accordingly and no politicising, shouting, clapping, booing, or any other disruptive behaviour would be tolerated.

Cancelling the Promised Afrikaans Translation

The Chairman assured us that the parliamentarians sitting on the platform were only present to listen and they would not be saying a word all day, as they had come to hear the people of Cape Town on this matter. This was then repeated in Xhosa. When the translator was about to repeat the introduction in Afrikaans, he was told not to bother.

Remember That we are in a House of God

After telling us that the members of parliament would not say a word all day, the Chairman gave each parliamentarian an opportunity to introduce themselves. MP Steve Swart of the African Christian Democratic Party (ACDP) greeted everyone in the Name of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ and reminded all present that we were gathered in a House of God and should behave accordingly. There was some abuse shouted at him from some of the mob gathered.

Marxist Sloganeering by Members of the Parliamentary Committee

Then followed the incredible scene of one EFF (Everything For Free) party member after another of the parliamentary committee making rousing political statements and shouting slogans encouraging huge mob hysteria, screams and dancing by their unruly supporters in the venue.

Disproportionate Representation

Considering that the EFF obtained only 6% of the votes country-wide in the last National Elections and much less than that in Cape Town, it was extraordinary to see that 12 of the 23 members of the parliamentary committee were EFF.

DA Absent from the Fight

Although the Democratic Alliance (DA) are meant to be the majority party in the Western Cape, we only noticed one person representing the DA stand up from the floor to give any reaction to the proposed amendment of Section 25 of the constitution. We did see a gathering of people in DA shirts with their distinctive blue banners, across the street but we did not see them inside the venue, nor did we hear from them. It would appear that the Democratic Alliance was absent from this fight.

Marxist Prejudice on Display at Hearings

The vast majority of those chosen by the chairman to represent our concerns in the Cape were uniformed EFF and ANC rent-a-mob. Very few supporters of the ACDP, Freedom Front, or Cape Party were granted an opportunity to speak and almost no DA supporters were in evidence inside the venue.

Blatant Bias

Throughout the 5 hours of this hearing the chairman continued to choose uniformed EFF and ANC people as the predominant amount of members of the “public permitted” to give verbal testimony. Time and again, one would hear the chairman choose speakers by saying “the man with the red beret”, “the man wearing the yellow ANC t-shirt”, “the lady with the ANC headdress”, “the man in the red EFF shirt!”, “the man in the red EFF jacket”, “the man wearing the ANC shirt!” and so on!

Political Realities in the Cape

At the Bi-election last year in Brackenfell, the DA received about 70% of the vote, the Cape Party received 19% of the vote, the Freedom Front received 9% of the vote and the ACDP, ANC and EFF all received less than 1% of the vote. That was just one major area of Cape Town, Brackenfell, but there is no doubt that the majority of voters in Cape Town support the DA and only a very small minority support the EFF. You would never had known that from the so-called hearings in Goodwood last Saturday.

Verbal and Physical Assault

Although there were quite a fair number of Cape Party supporters wearing their distinctive shirts, none were selected to speak. In the end when one woman supporting the Cape Party, but not wearing any identification, stood up to speak, she was actually assaulted by members of the rent-a-mob in the upper gallery! When Jack Miller of the Cape Party stood up to speak, the abusive threats and shouting so drowned him out, that it was hard to hear most of what he said.

Contrast of Reactions

Everyone listened quietly and respectfully to the endless repetition of radical communist rhetoric and repeating of mindless slogans, yet the moment anyone started to comment critically on the proposed amendment of Section 25 of the Constitution, they were shouted down by increasingly loud and abusive threats and insults.

Loud Abusive Heckling Tolerated

Although the chairman, on numerous occasions, said that he will not warn the people again to have no shouting, booing, or heckling, the abusive heckling, threats, shouting and blatant politicisation was tolerated until the noise was so deafening that you could barely hear what individuals were saying, despite the use of microphones and a PA system.

Marxist Hijackings of Proceedings

Looking around the chaotic scene inside the Friends of God Church in Goodwood, one could see huge sways of the area dominated by the red berets of the EFF, or the yellow shirts, jackets and head dresses of the ANC. One could also see many of the young people, some actually just teenagers, sleeping in the church. Evidently their purpose was not to come and listen, or to speak, but merely to occupy seats to ensure that most of the Capetonians who came to participate in these hearings would not have space inside and would be forced to remain voiceless outside.

Fraud Exposed

The Joint Constitutional Review Committee’s public hearings on amending Section 25 of the Constitution seemed to have been a complete fraud because, even before the hearings began in the Western Cape, ANC president Cyril Ramaphosa announced that, no matter what, the ANC was going ahead with expropriation of land from whites without compensation.

Farce and Deliberate Wasting of Time

It was a farce because no attempt was made to enforce the rules and blatant politicisation and slogan-shouting. Mob-rule was not only tolerated, but actually even encouraged by members of the committee. Instead of reasoned debate and discussion, considering facts and evidence of case studies in recent history, repetitive shouting of slogans and deliberate wasting of time ensured that the majority of Capetonians who had come to contribute to the discussion were not able to be heard.

Failure to Allow Capetonians to be Heard

It was plainly a failure if the intention had been to investigate whether it was even necessary to amend Article 25 of the Constitution, considering that they tolerated mobs of uniformed political agitators to fill much of the venue and to dominate the vast majority of the hearings.

Counter Productive

As a Missionary, who has served suffering people throughout Africa for over 37 years, it is clear to me that the planned Expropriation Without Compensation would be counter-productive. In every case where expropriation without compensation has been implemented, the result has been far greater poverty and suffering for the poor and most vulnerable.

Case Studies in Recent History

The case studies include: Stalin's Soviet Union where dekulakisation land reform resulted in the hunger plague which killed 11 million people and displaced 18 million. Red China where Mao Tse Tung's Great Cultural Revolution destroyed millions of lives, thousands of years of Chinese history and culture and led to widespread famine. The Red Terror under Mengistu in Ethiopia. The disastrous land reforms of Julius Nyerere in Tanzania. The catastrophic famine that resulted from Samora Machel's communist land reform in Mozambique. The complete destruction of the once agriculturally rich food exporting Angola and most recently, Robert Mugabe's catastrophic land confiscations in neighbouring Zimbabwe.

Political Power Built on the Backs of the Poor

In every single case dictators accumulated more power; even while they violated their promises and oppressed the very people they claimed to be serving.

Guaranteed Pathway to Starvation

Land Expropriation is always disastrous. Evicting capable, experienced farmers from land their families have carved out of wilderness and thorn bushes and cultivated, curtails food production and creates hardships and unemployment. Socialist land reform always leads to starvation in the cities.

The Goal is Not Farming But Looting

Farming is hard work and it takes expertise and experience. As the Zimbabwe experience showed, most of those advocating expropriation without compensation are not interested in getting up early to plough the fields and milk the cows. Most are not interested in cultivating crops. Most just want to loot productive farms, smash the equipment, burn the homes and then go back to the city to watch TV.

Pathway to Disaster

Recent history demonstrates the disaster of government interference in the economy. It also demonstrates the disaster of breaking God's Commands. "Thou shalt not steal." "Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's goods."

Consider the Casualties

Missionaries are busy caring for the casualties of such irresponsible political decisions in Zimbabwe, the Congo and other socialist experiments. Let us not follow in the footsteps of failure.

Why Disrupt Productive Farms When the State Has Vastly More Land Available?

The South African government is in control of vast amounts of land which are unoccupied and unproductive. Rather than settle and develop those lands under government control, they prefer to disrupt productive farms and evict experienced farmers. The South African government has more than 4,000 farms at their disposal which they have acquired over the last 24 years on the "willing buyer, willing seller" basis, which have not yet been reallocated to any farmers.

A Cynical Policy Designed to Distract Voters from the Failure of Government

We suspect that the present policy of expropriation without compensation is being cynically promoted to distract voters from the failure of government and the looting of this country by excessive taxation, inflation and corruption.

A Christian Response to Race Politics

Race politics is highly irresponsible. We need to learn to love our neighbour, not to covet and envy and hate and resent. We need a Christian work ethic, not socialist greed and yet another failed state.

Waste of Taxpayer's Hard Earned Money

The billions of Rands squandered by the ANC on VIP protection for parliamentarians and the billions squandered by the ANC on bailing out South African Airways (SAA) and the billions squandered bailing out the state controlled ESKOM, electricity provider, would be better spent investing in agriculture and training rural farmers and other entrepreneurs.

Private Initiatives by Farmers are Achieving More than Government Policies

AgriSA in their 2018 Transformation Report, released in April this year, reported on spending over R331

Million on transformation initiatives nationally, with 109,059 black farmers benefiting from their training and development, mentorship and farming initiatives. It is quite clear that private enterprise initiatives, such as these, are a far more effective and sustainable model than the failed state land grabs which have only led to greater poverty and starvation. This is clearly evident everywhere it has been implemented.

Illegal and Unconstitutional Political Opportunism

Expropriation Without Compensation is in blatant violation of our Constitution. It is illegal by our own Bill of Rights and laws. It is dangerous to erode our Constitutional safeguards. It would be catastrophic to break our own laws for political opportunism.

Economic Suicide

It would be economic suicide to violate the Laws of God and the laws of economics. To chase away employers, investors and tourists would result in millions more unemployed and much greater suffering and even starvation. It would be insane to destroy our productive agricultural sector with this highly irresponsible political scheme.

Race Hate Betrays South Africa

Expropriation Without Compensation would be a betrayal of the vision of the united, colour-blind South Africa, where: "Never, never, never again will any South African be discriminated against on the basis of their race!"

Innocent Until Proven Guilty in Court by Due Process

It is a fundamental principle of justice that a person is innocent until proven guilty. Due process of law is essential. Checks and balances are vital. No person should be deprived of their property without due process in court, with all reasonable opportunities to defend themselves against any and all charges.

It Is Irrational to Pronounce a Whole Race of People Guilty

One cannot pronounce a whole people group guilty of any crime! It is not rational, nor is it fair. If any individual has stolen, or expropriated without compensation, let that be tested in court in accordance with the law. Do not do anything against your neighbour that you would not want done to yourself. Do unto others what you want done to yourself.

Restitution is Personal Not Political

Restitution must be done by the convicted criminals to the victims, directly and entirely. It is not right for people who did not do any crime to be required to do restitution to people who are not the victim! Restitution is not meant to be a scam for politicians to go on a vote while they loot the country through corruption, taxation and inflation.

Real Help and Hope for the Poor

If our government really wants to help the poor, then they must stop stealing from them by corruption! The African Union estimates that 25% of the Gross Domestic Product (GDP) is stolen by corruption every single year! If the ANC want to empower the poor – give them legal title deeds to their own homes – so that they may have collateral with which to secure loans.

The Only Path to Prosperity and Progress

If the state wants to create jobs and grow the economy – then they must respect private ownership of property. Do not erode constitutional safeguards and thereby chase away investors, entrepreneurs, tourists and job creators. Socialism is the pathway to ruin. Let us rather follow examples of excellence in Singapore and Switzerland. Decentralise. Create tax havens. Respect life and property.

Hope for South Africa

The only hope for our country is to turn away from race politics and hate. We need to love one another. We need to turn to God in humility, to humble ourselves and pray and seek His face and turn from our wicked ways. Then God will hear from Heaven, He will forgive our sins and heal our land (2 Chronicles 7:14).

Each one of us on the Day of Judgement will one day stand before Almighty God and give an account for every word that we have ever spoken.

“For we must all appear before the Judgment seat of Christ, that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he has done, whether good, or bad.” 2 Corinthians 5:10

Dr. Peter Hammond

Frontline Fellowship

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725

Cape Town South Africa Tel: 021-689-4480

mission@frontline.org.za www.FrontlineMissionSA.org

www.hmsschoolofchristianjournalism.org

BBBEE AFFIRMATIVE ACTION IS RACISM

“One ordinance shall be for you of the assembly and for the stranger who dwells with you, an ordinance forever throughout your generations; as you are, so shall the stranger be before the Lord. One law and one custom shall be for you and for the stranger who dwells with you.” Numbers 15:15-16

Affirmative Action is Racism

Racial quotas in sports, education, or employment, violate the Laws of God and are counterproductive.

Equity in Law

“You shall do no injustice in judgment. You shall not be partial to the poor, nor honour the person of the mighty. In righteousness you shall judge your neighbour.” Leviticus 19:15

The Greatest Commandment

“...You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your mind and with all your strength... love your neighbour as yourself...” Mark 12:30-31. How do we love our neighbour? By obeying the second tablet of the Law. Do not steal your neighbour's life. Do not steal your neighbour's wife. Do not steal your neighbour's property. Do not steal your neighbour's good name through gossip, slander and false witness. Do not envy, or be jealous, of your neighbour. Do not covet. Respect for life and property is absolutely essential for any free and productive society.

The Golden Rule

“Therefore, whatever you want men to do to you, do also to them, for this is the Law and the Prophets.” Matthew 7:12. In the Sermon on the Mount, our Lord Jesus Christ summarises the heart of the second tablet of the Law, to love your neighbour as yourself, requiring us to do to others as we would want them to do to us. Conversely, to not do to others what we would not want them to do to us. *“And just as you want men to do to you, you also do to them likewise.”* Luke 6:31

Violating God's Law Hurts the Very People We Claim We Want to Help

Broad Based Black Economic Empowerment (BBBEE) and Affirmative Action violates the Laws of God, erodes the essential foundations for a free and prosperous society and is completely counterproductive. It actually destroys the very people it was meant to help.

A Sense of Victimhood and Entitlement Destroys Character and Work Ethic

There is nothing more destructive to any person than an abundance of bread and idleness of hands. A sense of entitlement and perpetual victimhood is absolutely devastating to character, integrity and work ethic. Socialist welfare programmes actually debase the very people they are ostensibly meant to serve and help. Hard work, discipline and integrity are essential for every individual. Inculcating in any group of people a sense of victimhood, entitlement and grievance destroys them, body, mind and soul. The tragic results can be seen in the litter-strewn, graffiti vandalised, pollution-ridden and broken down areas where a large number of recipients of government handouts live. *“Treasures of wickedness profit nothing, but righteousness delivers from death. The Lord will not allow the righteous soul to famish, but He casts away the desire of the wicked. He who has a slack hand becomes poor, but the hand of the diligent makes rich.”* Proverbs 10:2-4

Stereotypes, Caricatures and Deception

BBBEE violates the Ninth Commandment to not bear false witness. The justification for BBBEE Affirmative Action racial quotas is false narratives, lies, stereotypes and caricatures, which paint one racial group as helpless victims and the other as malicious exploiters. *“Dishonest scales are an abomination to the Lord, but a just weight is His delight.”* Proverbs 11:1

Greed, Envy and Covetousness

BBBEE breaks the Tenth Commandment against coveting anything that belongs to one's neighbour. Greed, envy and covetousness are the very heart and soul of Affirmative Action. BBBEE is the creed of envy and the politics of failure. It rots souls, hearts and minds.

Stealing the Fruit of Others Hard Work, Ingenuity, Dedication and Sacrifice

BBBEE and Affirmative Action obviously also violates the Eighth Commandment. To punish the productive and to take from those who, through hard work, ingenuity and dedication, carved productive farms out of thorn bush and wilderness, is theft. BBBEE has proven to be a cover for corruption and a channel for hate, greed and theft.

Looting the Country

The African Union has calculated that more than 25% of the Gross Domestic Product (GDP) of Africa, is stolen through corruption by governments every year. Recent news headlines in South Africa, include: **R139 Billion theft from Eskom** (the national electricity provider) **investigated**. Government parastatals, such as South African Airways, Eskom, Telkom, Transnet, SABC, state hospitals, schools and so much more, are bankrupt with many billions being looted from these state enterprises by government employees every year. Hundreds-of-billions of Rands of taxpayers' money has to be poured into these bottomless pit black holes, to try to make up for the Trillions of Rand that have already been looted by state corruption. The rolling black out power failures, which are daily inconveniencing, frustrating and undermining the lives and work of millions of South Africans are a further theft of time and productivity.

Fraud, Failure and Farce

BBBEE has proven to be a colossal fraud. Not actually helping the poor, but making the poor poorer, by eroding the infrastructure, gutting the very ministries and services which are meant to help, leaving the majority of the country in squalor and darkness with regular, rolling blackout power failures, what is euphemistically called: "*load shedding*!" The vast majority of state schools are dysfunctional. Classrooms are overcrowded. Textbooks arrive late, or not at all. Hospitals are chronically short of medicines, food and reliable staff. People are literally dying in the country because of BBBEE greed, corruption and heartless incompetence.

Malice, Hatred and Murder

BBBEE Affirmative Action violates the Sixth Commandment that we do not murder. Malice and hatred are at the heart of Affirmative Action. Their false narrative is based upon demonizing the white minority in the country and particularly channelling murderous hate toward white farmers, who, against all odds, are trying to feed the country. Many thousands of white commercial farmers in South Africa and their family members have been murdered. Some in the most demonic and sadistic torturous ways.

War Against Farmers

In 1994, when Nelson Mandela became president, South Africa had 70,000 white commercial farmers who were feeding 100 Million people. This at a time when South Africa's population was about 28 Million. Today, South Africa has a population of over 58 Million, yet, despite having more than doubled the population, now has less than half as many commercial farmers as 25 years ago. Today there are less than 30,000 white commercial farmers who are managing to feed approximately 40 million people. However, our population is now over 58 Million and therefore, for the first time in South Africa's history, we have become a net food importer. We need to import millions of tonnes of food each year to manage to adequately feed the population. Our farmers are no longer able to feed all of South Africa.

Increasing the Ranks of the Unemployed

Unemployment has also steadily escalated under ANC misrule. From just over 2 Million unemployed in 1994, we now have over 30 Million unemployed, or as the ANC government likes to re-categorise some as: "*economically inactive*", or "*discouraged work seekers*". That means the ANC has managed to add more than a million unemployed for every year that they have been in power!

Chasing Away Investors, Job Creators and Employers

How have they managed to do this? Despite no war and no conscription and with massive foreign aid, the ANC has managed to exponentially increase unemployment in the country by chasing away investors, job creators and employers. The latest Expropriation Without Compensation (EWC) declaration by Cyril Ramaposa, has even further weakened the impoverished South African Rand and given warning to any investors or employers that property rights are under threat and South Africa is a bad investment.

Promising Heaven But Delivering Hell

Socialism always promises Heaven and invariably delivers hell. Every socialist policy undermines the essential foundations for economic growth, discourages investors, chases away employers, increases costs and guarantees greater unemployment and further rises in prices. Crime and grime increase. Standards of living plummet. Service delivery becomes a sick joke. The currency is devalued.

Overtaxing Fuel

The outrageous cost of fuel in our country is one case in point. The Automobile Association calculates that over 60% of what we are paying at the petrol pump, goes to the ANC government in the form of taxes and levies. Only a minority of the cost of fuel goes to the petrol company, the oil-producing country and all the middlemen

involved. For this reason, Botswana, which is a land-locked country and must obtain their fuel from South Africa, can sell fuel at half the price that South Africa does!

Idolatry and Statism

BBBEE not only violates the Golden Rule of Christ and our Lord's greatest commandment, the prohibitions against bearing false witness, coveting, stealing and murdering, but it is also violating the First and Second Commandment by being idolatrous and statist as well.

Blasphemous

BBBEE sometimes even violates the Third Commandment against Blasphemy. The blasphemous and arrogant statements by ANC leaders, such as that president "*Zuma is like Jesus!*", that the ANC "*will rule until Jesus comes*" and Julius Malema's outrageous statements. The hostility evidenced against Christianity in general and against our Lord Jesus Christ in particular, by the BLF, EFF and ANC leadership makes it clear that this is not just a war against the Laws of God, but a war against God Himself. The fact is state TV SABC broadcasts blasphemy and the laws of the land protect blasphemy as "*free speech*", but want to criminalise some people's opinions in the name of "*hate speech*" bills! So blasphemy against God is "*constitutionally*" protected by the ANC, but free speech can be construed as "*blasphemy*" against the state!

Outrageous, Adulterous Paedophilia and Perversion

BBBEE has also proven to frequently violate the Seventh Commandment against adultery as well. School principals have shown me letters received from the Ministry of Education warning teachers to stop "*requiring students to provide sexual favours*" as this is "*a violation of their position of trust!*" The amount of outrageous, adulterous paedophilia, abuse of authority and sexual harassment carried out under the cover of Affirmative Action is criminal.

Removing Incentives to Work and Encouraging Laziness

The Fourth Commandment requires us to work six days and rest one day in seven. Sabbath desecration laws have been torn up. Desecration of the Lord's Day is widespread. But BBBEE goes even further than that by taking away the incentive to work for many of the black majority who have been described as "*disadvantaged*" and are given SASSA grants and promised land and opportunities to loot productive white farms when EWC comes through, etc. In all too many cases, it seems like a return to the National Suicide of the Xhosa with Nongqawuse's cattle-killing visions of 1856.

Fostering an Attitude of Disrespect for Parents

BBBEE also violates the Fifth Commandment by encouraging disrespect for parental authority and elders, slandering founding fathers of the country and encouraging widespread disrespect for parents and elders. The enactment of laws forbidding corporal punishment and discipline by parents has produced an unprecedentedly lawless generation of abusive and lawless youth who even assault teachers at school.

A Cover for Colossal Corruption

BBBEE has proven to be the greatest threat to South Africa's economy. A colossal fraud. A cover for colossal corruption. A channel for widespread hatred, greed, theft and murder. "*Righteousness exalts a nation, but sin is a reproach to any people.*" Proverbs 14:34

Malicious National Suicide

BBBEE Affirmative Action is a hateful, thieving, covetous, deceitful, poisonous, murderous, selfish, evil, self-destructive and counter-productive idolatrous, statist, blasphemous, adulterous movement of mass destruction. "*The hand of the diligent will rule, but the lazy man will be put to forced labour.*" Proverbs 12:24

Zimbabwe in Ruins

One would have thought that the catastrophic example of our near neighbour to the North, Zimbabwe, would have been sufficient warning to anyone and every one of where such malice and foolishness inevitably leads.

Distractions

When corrupt politicians are looting a country on the scale that the ANC has been doing for the last 25 years, one needs massive amounts of distraction and convenient scapegoats to channel the frustration of the defrauded masses away from those responsible for their plight.

Hypocritical

It turns out that those screaming *racism* and accusing others of being *racist* the loudest are the most racist of all!

Cynically Exploiting Grievances for Political Gain

Booker T. Washington observed: *“There is a class of coloured people who make a business of keeping the troubles, the wrongs and the hardships of the Negro race before the public. Having learned that they are able to make a living out of their troubles, they have grown into the settled habit of advertising their wrongs – partly because they want sympathy and partly because it pays! Some of these people do not want the Negro to lose his grievances, because they do not want to lose their jobs.”*

Racial Quotas for Sports Teams

It is interesting that in the 1970s the African National Congress was calling for boycotts, sanctions and disinvestment of South Africa for having racial discrimination in sports. South Africa had all-black teams and all-white teams at the time. Yet, today, the ANC government is forcing rigid race quotas on companies, sports teams and for educational institutions.

Racist BBBEE Affirmative Action Led to Nationwide Blackout Power Failures

In 2015, Eskom was required to shed 1,081 white Engineers and 2,179 white Artisans to comply with strict new government BBBEE Affirmative Action requirements. By 2019, Eskom was bankrupt, ruined and in stage 4 rolling blackouts throughout the country. Minister of Public Enterprises, Pravin Gordhan, reported that only 27,000 megawatts are available for use at present, which is just 56% of South Africa’s installed capacity of 48,000 megawatts. Bernard Magoro, the Systems Operator for Eskom, explained that since November, Eskom has been burning diesel to meet its demands *“We have actually been operating with a lot of diesel to meet the demand and this is not ideal.”* Indeed it is one of the most expensive and cost inefficient, wasteful ways of providing electricity. Eskom explained that the reason for the failure is that the average age of its power stations is 34 years old. Only 3 power stations have been built within the last decade. More than half of the power stations are over 37 years old. *“The soul of a lazy man desires and has nothing, but the soul of the diligent shall be made rich. **Wealth gained by dishonesty will be diminished, but he who gathers by labour will increase.**”* Proverbs 13:4,11

Mismanagement and Corruption Has Sabotaged the Whole Country

Eskom made a management decision to not provide the maintenance required for its stations, but rather to build new stations. However, as Gordhan and Eskom Chairman, Jabu Mabuza explained, *“Eskom is experiencing financial, maintenance and structural problems due to malfeasance.”* While Eskom’s maintenance budget has been shrinking, their power stations have been growing older. Gordhan added that *“while malfeasance was to blame, mismanagement and corruption also stirred into the mix.”* *“But let justice run down like water and righteousness like a mighty stream.”* Amos 5:24

Rampant Looting at Eskom and the Rape of the Country

The Sunday Times banner headlined: *“Eskom: R139 Billion Theft Probed – Rampant looting at new power plants push the State Capture costs to R300 Billion”* The other side of the same front page headlines declared: *“Rape claim rocks ANC”* **“Hate evil, love good; establish justice in the gate...”** Amos 5:15

Licence to Loot

Stephan Hofstatter published a new book: *“Licence to Loot – How the Plunder of Eskom and other parastatals almost sank South Africa.”* **“Destruction is in its midst; oppression and deceit do not depart from its streets.”** Psalm 55:11

Supporting What She Recognised as Unconstitutional and Unethical

It is therefore inexplicable how Cheryllyn Dudley, MP of the ACDP, could vote to support the BBBEE Amendment Act 2013. In her statement in the House, 29 October 2013, on the Employment Equity Amendment Bill debate, Cheryllyn Dudley MP declared *“The ACDP supports the broad intention of Employment Equity Legislation... but what is particularly problematic with this Amendment Bill, is that the democratic process, from the parliamentary side, has left business stakeholders feeling that their views have been totally ignored.... Business Unity South Africa’s executive director, Vanessa Phala, says: The trend of the Labour Committee passing bills without considering the views of business is very, very worrying; and labour expert, Andrew Levy, called the process of consultation a charade. Miss Phala says the bill’s removal of the right of companies to appeal against the compliance orders is a violation of the principles of administrative justice and probably unconstitutional...”* Yet after stating numerous reasons why the Bill should not be supported, ACDP’s Cheryllyn Dudley concluded with: *“the ACDP, will, however, be supporting the Bill despite our reservations...!”* Why would a Christian vote for a Bill that is so unconstitutional, unjust and thoroughly unBiblical? **“To the Law and to the testimony! If they do not speak according to this Word, it is because there is no light in them.”** Isaiah 8:20

Real Restitution

Restitution was never meant to be a political scam, a cover for corruption, where people who did not do any crime are forced to pay *restitution* to people who were not the victims. Biblical restitution is to be made entirely and fully from the culprit directly to the victim. The restitution that needs to be done in South Africa is from the corrupt ANC government officials who have looted trillions of Rands from the public treasury through corruption and defrauded the entire population through excessive taxation, corruption and inflation. ***“For I, the Lord, love justice; I hate robbery...”*** Isaiah 61:8

A Clear Choice

“See, I have set before you today life and good, death and evil, in that I command you today to love the Lord your God, to walk in His ways and to keep His commandments, His statutes and His judgments, that you may live and multiply; and the Lord your God will bless you in the land...” Deuteronomy 30:15-16

CHAPTER 29

THE NATIONAL SUICIDE OF THE XHOSA

“*There is a way that seems right to a man, but its end is the way of death.*” Proverbs 14:12

Economic Suicide

The “*cattle killing*” national suicide of the Xhosa in 1856 in Transkei, now the Eastern Cape of South Africa, was one of history’s strangest socio-economic disasters. Within twelve months the population of Xhosaland plummeted by 80%, mostly through starvation. This bizarre episode was initiated by the niece of a witchdoctor. Through mass hysteria the Xhosa convinced themselves of the need to kill all their cattle, destroy all their food and sow no crops for the future. It was economic suicide and it led to mass starvation.

Evil Spirits

In April 1856, two young Xhosa girls, 15 year-old Nongqawuse and 10 year-old Nombanda, were sent to chase birds from cornfields near the River Gxara. The elder girl, Nongqawuse, reported that while they were drinking at the water’s edge two mysterious figures materialised alongside them. They told the girls to take a message back to their kraal that a great event was about to take place. All the people should kill all their cattle as these would no longer be needed. Once the great day came there would be no shortages of any kind, so they must tell their people that there must be no sowing or cultivation of crops and all stored grain must be thrown away. Once this had been carried out, the strangers told the girls that no further work must be done. When all the cattle had been killed the *Russians* would come, sweeping all the whites into the sea. (It was known that the British were fighting the *Russians* in the Crimean War “up North”, so it was generally assumed that the *Russians* were black people).

Witchdoctor Confirms the Prophecy

The girls duly carried the message back to their kraal. At first everyone simply laughed, ridiculing them for their naivety. But, the girls went back to the river the next day and received the same message. Nongqawuse was supported by her uncle Mhalakaza, who was a witchdoctor. Four days later when Mhalakaza went to the river with his niece, he could not see the figures the girl assured him were there and could hear their words only when Nongqawuse translated them for him. Nongqawuse claimed they said: “*We are the people who have come to order you to kill your cattle, to consume your corn and not to cultivate anymore.*” Mhalakaza was instructed to take this message to the paramount chief of the Xhosa, Sarili and to all the other chiefs.

Cattle Killing

Mhalakaza adopted the vision and message of the “*New People*” as his life-calling and he advanced it fervently. Mhalakaza began by killing his own cattle. Soon, his neighbours followed suit. There was general excitement at the thought of the new herds of cattle that the strange spirits had promised would appear on the great day. Over 400,000 cattle were slaughtered in Transkei.

“Clothes Contaminate – Nakedness is Pure”

Paramount chief Sarili listened to Mhalakaza’s words and was prepared to believe that Nongqawuse had really seen the strangers. He was encouraged in this by his own hopes of seeing the British driven away from the borders of his lands; and of seeing the influence of the white men removed from Xhosa life and society. Sarili particularly objected to European clothes, saying that his naked people, coated in red clay, were “*clean*” compared to the whites, who wore clothes.

“The Russians are Coming!”

During 1855, before Nongqawuse’s vision, news had reached the Xhosa of the Crimean War. The Xhosa hoped that the British would be beaten and that the “*Russians*” would come and force the whites to leave their farms so that they could be looted and their herds of cattle expropriated. The idea soon took root that Nongqawuse’s strange spirits had been “*Russian*” black men. The Xhosa believed that the *Russians* were actually the ghosts of Xhosa warriors who had died and therefore they must be black. The Xhosa expected the *Russians* to come to liberate them. But, they were assured that none of this could happen until all their cattle had been slaughtered and their grain stores destroyed.

Missionary Warnings Ignored

By the summer of 1856 the sayings of Mhalakaza were heard throughout the land and thousands of cattle were dying at the hands of their owners. British officials were aghast at the developments, but felt helpless to stop them. Missionary Charles Brownlee, brought up among the Xhosa and fluent in their language, was prominent in visiting the Xhosa kraals to try to counteract Mhalakaza’s influence, but most would not listen to his warnings. With Sarili supporting Mhalakaza’s message, the Xhosa people became divided between ‘believers’ and ‘unbelievers’, with the large majority believing the vision and following the paramount chief.

The Word of God vs. Witchcraft

“Thus says the Lord of Hosts: ‘Do not listen to the words of the prophets who prophesy to you. They make you worthless; they speak a vision of their own heart, not from the mouth of the Lord. They continually say to those who despise Me’, the Lord has said, ‘You shall have peace’; and to everyone who walks according to the dictates of his own heart, they say, ‘No evil shall come upon you.’ For who has stood in the counsel of the Lord and has perceived and heard His Word? Who has marked His Word and heard it?” Jeremiah 23:16-18

A Possible Plot to Provoke War

The British representative at Port Elizabeth, John Maclean, failed to fully comprehend the dreadful significance of what the Xhosa were doing, but sensed a plot to provoke war against British authority in South Africa. The British High Commissioner, Sir George Grey, was alerted about the disastrous development.

Destruction is to Precede Liberation

To prove to the unbelievers that Mhalakaza was telling the truth, Sarili now went with the prophet to the Gxara riverbank where the strangers had first appeared to Nongqawuse. There he was apparently shown one of his sons who had recently died and a long-dead favourite horse, as well as acorn and beer that miraculously appeared as presents from the *“New People.”* Sarili was impressed. When Mhalakaza told him that all his cattle and goats must immediately die, Sarili readily agreed. Mhalakaza warned everyone present that the *Russians* would not come nor would any of the other predictions come to pass until all the Xhosa cattle had been killed and all their grain destroyed. He then named places within Transkei where *Russians* would appear and where the dead would return to life. Sarili returned to his kraal to begin to kill his cattle. As did all the other *“believers”*. Soon Xhosa from throughout Transkei were hurrying towards the River Gxara in the hope of witnessing a miracle.

Self-Imposed Starvation

With the mass-hysteria mounting and the frenzied cattle killing escalating, Mhalakaza announced a date for the fulfilment of everyone’s eager expectations. At the end of 1856 Mhalakaza declared that the resurrection would occur at the time of the next full moon. Excitement reached fever pitch as the day of the full moon approached. But, in spite of the fact that hundreds of thousands of Xhosa people were earnestly anticipating it, nothing out the ordinary occurred. No *Russians* appeared. Nor did any cattle rise from the ground.

Doubts Arise

Chief Sarili began to have doubts. Already the young children were going short of food and soon the famine would be affecting everyone. He decided that Mhalakaza had better produce some of his *“New People”* in order to convince the Xhosa that their spectacular sacrifice was justified. Mhalakaza now was afraid and fled from his own kraal, fearing that Sarili might have him killed.

Deceptions Increase

He sent a message to the chief saying that the *“New People”* had moved to *“a stronghold”* to wait the day. The *“Russians”* were not impressed with the amount of cattle killed. All cattle in Transkei must die if the *“Russians”* were to come. Mhalakaza made a fresh prediction: The *“Russians”* and the new moon would appear, 16 August. Visitors to the riverbank found that the now frequent appearance of *“New People”* was stage-managed by Mhalakaza and his team of Marshalls. Nobody was allowed to get close enough to speak to the distant shapes, or hear what they said. They seemed to speak only to Mhalakaza, or through him. Sometimes the prophet pointed out to sea and told the pilgrims that there were the heads of *Russians* *“bobbing about in the water”*. At other times ghostly lowing was heard from unseen cattle, or bleating from invisible goats.

Cruel Hope

Frenzied hysteria now prevailed in Transkei. One day at the beginning of August, an afternoon mist was seized upon, as the beginning of the Day of Deliverance. Everyone fled to their homes anticipating their deliverance. The day passed and night fell and nothing happened.

Desperate Delusions

Every sound was interpreted as having a bearing on the coming of *“the New People”*. On the great day, Mhalakaza said, two suns would rise in the heavens and collide, whereupon all the whites would be swept into the sea, which would divide revealing a road down which they would march to the place of creation, known as *Uhlanga*. There satan would take his revenge on all whites and on those Xhosa who had disobeyed the call to kill their cattle. Then the world would be plunged into darkness until a new sun would rise and herald the new world. This apocalyptic vision drove the Xhosa into an orgy of even more cattle killing.

Dangerous Deceptions

The resurrection of the Xhosa dead would take place, Mhalakaza told the Xhosa. There would be a thundering of every ox-hide shield ever beaten. This would signify the approach of many herds of fine, new cattle that had been promised. New corn would cover the land and every human ill would be put right. The lame would walk,

the blind would see, the old would become young, the young become younger. Nobody would have to work. Everything would always be new. Absent on the day, would be those who had died by snakebite or had drowned in river or sea. The homes, herds and farms of the whites across the river would be theirs for the taking.

False Prophecy and Folly Brings Disaster

*“For the land is full of adulterers; for because of a curse the land mourns. The pleasant places of the wilderness are dried up. Their course of life is evil and their might is not right. ‘For both prophet and priest are profane; yes, in My house I have found their wickedness,’ says the Lord. ‘Therefore their way shall be to them like slippery ways; in the darkness they shall be driven on and fall in them; for I will bring disaster on them, the year of their punishment,’ says the Lord. ‘And I have seen folly in the prophets of Samaria: They prophesied by Baal and caused My people Israel to err. Also I have seen a horrible thing in the prophets of Jerusalem: **They commit adultery and walk in lies; they also strengthen the hands of evildoers, so that no one turns back from his wickedness.** All of them are like Sodom to Me and her inhabitants like Gomorrah.”* Jeremiah 23:10-14

More Deception and Delays

When 16 August passed without anything happening, Mhalakaza pressed for a postponement of the Great Day. The “*New People*” would not appear, unless those cunning Xhosa who had sold their cattle to avoid killing them carried out the decree completely. At one stage, a rumour was spread that armies of well-armed strangers had emerged from the sea and were lining the shores, but they could only be seen by the righteous. Apparently there were not many of those around at the time.

Doubts and Devious Deceptions

Mhalakaza next ordered everyone to thatch their huts securely as there would be a great storm and tempest on the Day of Judgment. Sarili was becoming suspicious. He was under intense pressure from his councillors, who were aghast at this willingness to continue slaughtering the nation’s cattle. So once more he visited Mhalakaza at the riverbank, in order to speak to the strangers. He was told by Mhalakaza to look at the ground and, under no circumstances, to look up. He would then see the shadows of the “*New People*” passing across the ground in front of him. Sarili accepted all this deception and was duly convinced when the shadows passed by him. But, reports of this meeting were so embroidered as they spread, that eventually it was claimed Sarili had seen boatloads of “*New People*” arrive at the mouth of the river, informing him they had come to establish the freedom of the black people.

Catastrophic Consequences

Meanwhile, frustrated at his inability to understand the self-destructiveness of the Xhosa, Sir George Grey threatened Sarili with dire consequences, if he encouraged his people to kill any more cattle. Grey could see that starvation in the land of the Xhosa would have catastrophic consequences. Sir Grey could not understand why the Xhosa were blind to their own danger.

Suicidal Stupidity

As 1856 drew to a close the skies over Transkei were filled with vultures, circling and diving at the bovine and human carcasses lying in almost equal numbers in the uncultivated fields. Already upwards of 400,000 cattle had been slaughtered and in the subsequent famine, at least 100 000 Xhosa died of starvation between the Fish and Kei Rivers. Sarili, meanwhile, still showed a blind faith in the word of Mhalakaza. Each time Sarili met him, Mhalakaza had a new excuse to explain why nothing had happened at successive new moons. Sarili was so upset that he had tried to kill himself after one failure and his servants were forced to remove all knives and sharp objects from near him.

Self-Deception

Mhalakaza, reaching the end of everyone’s patience, now spread the word that the “*New People*” had abandoned the Xhosa “*in disgust*” because they had not killed all their cattle! But, so desperate were the Xhosa by this stage that more bizarre visions were seen. Xhosa claimed to have seen Russian armies marching on the surface of the sea and people sailing in umbrellas and to have heard thousands of cattle beneath their feet.

Demonic Deception

On 31 January 1857, a great assembly of more than 5,000 Xhosa met near the town of Butterworth. ‘Believers’ from all across the land attended and Sarili himself was present. There they received another message from Mhalakaza that they must all go home and kill the milk cows that had been spared so far to provide milk for the babies and young children. The cows were then to be skinned and the hides used to protect the doors from the furious lightning that would precede the arrival of the “*new cattle*”. This time Mhalakaza added a few new touches. Once the new sun had risen in the sky, the sea would dry up and the sky would descend to just above head height.

Disillusionment

On 18 February 1857, the revised and delayed day was deemed to have finally arrived. An English settler, Robert Mullins, was with a group of Xhosa when the great moment came. The sun rose and the sunset, as usual, nothing happened. Mullins recorded the day's events in his diary with clinical accuracy. In between, *"Nothing much happened, except a lot of waiting and desperate hoping on the part of the Xhosa"*. Mrs Brownlee, a more sensitive witness, noted, *"One of the saddest sights was that of an old woman wizened with age and doubly wrinkled by starvation, decked out with brass rings jingling on her withered arms and legs. They had kept on their ornaments, hoping against hope, till too weak to remove them. As the sun set there was a silence across the land, as of death. No children laughed and played, no cattle lowed, no sheep bleated and no happy herdsmen laughed and joked with his friends at the end of a day's work."*

The Nongqawuse Syndrome

As if seeing the light for the first time, Sarili pointed at Nongqawuse and said *"The reason we are broken today is on account of this girl!"* But, she was not the only one to blame. Sarili, himself, had succumbed to the fantasies of the charlatan Mhalakaza, the dreamer and schemer, who had wanted to be the *"Messenger."* Was Mhalakaza a madman, demon possessed, or just an inadequate human being, unable to cope with life and reality? Perhaps he even believed his own stories. The tragedy was that so too did the vast majority of the Xhosa who had destroyed their nation.

"The prophet who has a dream, let him tell a dream; and he who has My Word, let him speak My Word faithfully. What is the chaff to the wheat?" says the Lord. 'Is not My Word like a fire?' says the Lord 'and like a hammer that breaks the rock in pieces?'" Jeremiah 23:28-29

Prophets of Deceit Invite Disaster

"Behold, a whirlwind of the Lord has gone forth in fury - a violent whirlwind! It will fall violently on the head of the wicked. The anger of the Lord will not turn back until He has executed and performed the thoughts of His heart. In the latter days you will understand it perfectly. 'I have not sent these prophets, yet they ran. I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied. But, if they had stood in My counsel and had caused My people to hear My Words, then they would have turned them from their evil way and from the evil of their doings.' 'Am I a God near at hand,' says the Lord, 'And not a God afar off? Can anyone hide himself in secret places, so I shall not see him?' says the Lord; 'Do I not fill heaven and earth?' says the Lord. 'I have heard what the prophets have said who prophesy lies in My Name, saying, 'I have dreamed, I have dreamed!' How long will this be in the heart of the prophets who prophesy lies? Indeed they are prophets of the deceit of their own heart." Jeremiah 23:19-16

Disaster and Death

British officials who toured Transkei trying to distribute food, found heart-breaking sights. In some places the people had climbed into their grain pits to see if they had been miraculously filled in their absence. But, too weak to climb out again, they had died there. Emaciated women with children clinging to their flattened breasts raked the hard ground for roots. Starvation drove others to boil and eat their ox-hide shields or their leather skirts. Those who reached the soup kitchens provided by the British were no more than walking skeletons and many died of exhaustion a short distance from safety. A missionary wrote, *"Famine has effaced all human likeness. Young men of twenty lost their voices and chirruped like birds. Children were wrinkled and withered and grey. Men and women presented the appearance of baboons and like baboons searched under stones for insects to devour."* As the vultures and wild dogs devoured the dead and half-dead Xhosa, the survivors turned to cannibalism in their last desperate urge to live, killing and eating their own children. Mhalakaza himself died of starvation along with his niece Nongqawuse.

"He who tills his land will have plenty of bread, but he who follows frivolity will have poverty enough!"

Proverbs 28:19

Chapter 30

DELIBERATE ARSON IN THE CAPE

“Their feet are swift to shed blood; destruction and misery are in their ways.” Romans 3:15-16

Waves of Fires in the Western Cape

More than 120 people died in fires and 762 arson attacks were recorded in the Western Cape during 2018. Forensic investigator, David Klatzow, observed that simultaneous fires, starting at the same time, *“raises a big red flag”* and suggests *“deliberate agency”*.

Knysna Forest Fires

Times Live reported, 8 June 2017, *“Are Knysna Fires the Result of Arson?”* Firefighters in the Knysna area were battling 26 separate fires which destroyed hundreds of homes and thousands of hectares of forest.

Malicious Tokai Arsonists Sought

IOL and the Cape Times reported in January 2017 that rewards were offered for information on the people responsible for the eleven Tokai forest fires which were believed to have been started maliciously.

Suspicious Spate of Fires in Cape Town

On 18 January 2017, City of Cape Town’s Safety and Security member, J.P. Smith, stated: *“The spate of fires is truly suspicious and we have an investigations team that is looking into it.”* The Cape Times front page banner headline – *“Firestorm – Arson suspected as scores of fires threaten lives and property in Cape.”*

Persistent Pattern

28 January 2019, Robbie Erasmus from Enviro Wildlife reported on 9 fires ravaging different areas across the Western Cape in one week. Hundreds of firefighters were kept busy battling fires in Cape Town, Cederberg, Overberg and Overstrand. Mr Erasmus concluded, that while some causes may be natural, there was evidence of others having been started deliberately. Firefighters reported that fires were *“never this bad”*, this *“persistent”* and this *“long-lasting”* before. Wildfires ravaging mountains and forestry reserves is now becoming a pattern.

Arsonists in Action

29 October 2018, seven people, including a baby and a pregnant woman were killed in a Western Cape forest fire near Knysna. Helicopter pilots in the Knysna area reported seeing children starting forest fires while firefighters were battling 40 separate fires in the Knysna area simultaneously. The devastating fire on Signal Hill, January 2019, was proven to be arson.

Racist Incitement to Burn White Farmers

Lindsay Maasdorp of Black First Land First, posted on social media: *“If it is a white-owned farm it must burn!”* Thousands of hectares of forestry reserve in the Western Cape have been devastated by wildfires. Across the country, buildings such as the historic Bloemfontein City Hall, have been destroyed by deliberate arson. Many communities feel under siege by Marxist inspired land invaders and unprecedented arson attacks. Apple farmers in Elgin experienced malicious fires, burning thousands of crates just before harvest season. Destruction of farm equipment, barns, sheds, equipment, vineyards, orchards, crops and forests are evidently part of a Revolutionary Agenda.

“The way of peace they have not known and there is no justice in their ways; they have made themselves crooked paths; whoever takes that way shall not know peace.” Isaiah 59:8

BUSES, TRAINS AND POLICE STATIONS BURN

Burning Buses Cause Traffic Mayhem

Yesterday, 25 April, two buses were destroyed by fire within 3 hours, causing massive traffic congestion on the N2. At around 2:20pm a Golden Arrow bus caught fire as it waited to load passengers at the CBD Terminal next to Golden Acre. Then just before 5pm, at Hospital Bend on the N2, a MyCiti Bus ablaze in the middle lane, compelled traffic to be diverted to the outgoing M3. J.P. Smith, on behalf of the city of Cape Town, reported that the bus had no passengers onboard and the driver had stopped in the middle lane of the N2 on Hospital Bend and escaped, reporting that the engine compartment of the bus had caught fire and quickly engulfed the vehicle.

Train Arsonist Boasts in Court That He Was Responsible

The day before, 24 April, Thobela Xoseni appeared in the Cape Town Magistrates Court and loudly declared through his Xhosa translator: *"I set the trains on fire! I burnt the trains!"* Reporters observed that Xoseni was smiling as he appeared in the court. The Mayor of Cape Town, Dan Plato, reported on 22 April 2019, that the train coaches lost in the Cape Town station blaze represented a monetary loss of R33 Million to the city's transportation supplies, Metrorail.

Most Trains Targeted for Arson are in the Western Cape

Transport Minister, Blade Nzimande, responded to a parliamentary question that 214 trains were burned in arson attacks in South Africa in the past 3 years, with 175 of them torched in the Western Cape. 69 coaches were burned in 2016. 41 coaches were burned in 2017. 65 coaches were burned in 2018. The Western Cape suffered 56 coaches out of the 65 burned in 2018. 8 incidents took place in Gauteng and one in KwaZulu-Natal.

Cape Town is the Main Target

Of the 174 trains burned in the Western Cape since 2015, 60 were burned in Cape Town, 23 in Kraaifontein, 16 in Retreat and the rest at various stations across the province, but mainly within the Cape Town metropolitan area.

Massive Cost to Cape Taxpayers

According to PRASA (Passenger Rail Agency of South Africa), train fires in the last three and a half years have incurred a loss to the taxpayer of over R636 Million. 71% of this, or R451 Million worth of damage, due to arson to trains occurred in the Western Cape. This did not include the damage to Cape Town station of R150 Million. Those were all figures discussed at the end of last year and does not include the train fires of 2019.

No Effective Deterrent to Arsonists in ANC Ruled South Africa

Richard Walker, Regional Head of Metrorail, stated that legislation needs to be amended, to act as a deterrent for train arsonists as they can currently only be charged for *malicious damage to property* because trains were not regarded as a fixed structure.

Mayor Blames ANC Government for Lawless Destruction

The Mayor of Cape Town observed: *"Cape Town Central Station has been the target of at least 7 and possibly 8 separate arson incidents since July 2018. Surely after the first incident you put the most stringent measures in place to ensure that this doesn't happen again? How is it that criminals can so brazenly burn our trains time and again and get away with it? If we are to maintain law and order in the city there needs to be consequences for criminal actions and it is only national government's SA Police Service, through the detective services and the National Prosecuting Authority who can get results with these cases."*

Three Police Stations Torched

Also on 24 April, it was reported that a 3rd Police Station in the Western Cape was torched, with 250 dockets going up in smoke. Police in the Western Cape are investigating a case of arson after an early morning inferno on 21 April gutted the Ravensmead Detectives offices, destroying over 250 criminal dockets and an internal server. This was the 3rd arson attack reported on South African Police Service (SAPS) premises in the Western Cape in one month. The other two were at Bellville and Klapmuts, earlier in April. The Ravensmead building has since been declared unsafe.

Labour Disputes Disrupt Police Service

Tensions in the SAPS have been reported as running high, with threatened go-slows and strikes by SAPS members, unhappy with reported delays in promotions, resulting in a backlog of 69,214 promotions since 2011.

Disastrous Effects on Economy

The evident lack of respect for life and property, as well as waste of millions of Rands of property and thousands of hours of travellers frustrate over interrupted schedules. These incidents have a disastrous impact on the economy.

Lawless Violence Steals from Everyone

Rampant arson, apparently with impunity, has a catastrophic impact on any economy, chasing away investors and employers, driving down the value of the Rand, stealing from everyone as the Rand/Dollar and Pound exchange rates become more and more punitive to South Africans. The end result is millions more unemployed. The catastrophic chaos and havoc wrecked at peak traffic times, coming along with the general failure of both national and provincial governments to protect lives and property, are even more compelling evidence of the general failure of government. ***“Righteousness exalts a nation, but sin condemns any people.”*** Proverbs 14:34

Hollow Promises from Hypocritical Politicians

As South Africans prepare to go to election polls 8 May, it seems bizarre that those very politicians and parties most responsible for the failure to keep the lights on, the failure to keep the water flowing, the failure to deal with litter, pollution, crime and violence, continue to make hollow and hypocritical promises, expecting voters to re-elect the same corrupt criminals responsible for the disastrous situation, which increasingly, afflicts every one of us. ***“But select capable men from all the people - men who fear God, trustworthy men who hate dishonest gain - and appoint them as officials...”*** Exodus 18:21

NOTRE DAME CATHEDRAL IN PARIS FIRE

The disastrous burning of Notre Dame Cathedral in Paris on 15 April, leads to many questions and serious implications. *Notre Dame de Paris* (French for Our Lady of Paris), was built between 1163 and 1260. The cathedral was officially consecrated in 1345.

Most Famous Gothic Building in the World

No other building represents France quite like Notre Dame. It has been the most visited monument in France. Notre Dame is without a doubt the most famous Gothic building worldwide. The church of Notre Dame received almost 13 million visitors every year. Notre Dame has dominated the Paris skyline since the 1200s. The wood used for the framing of the cathedral consisted of 1,200 Oak trees, representing 21 hectares of forest.

Desecrated and Hijacked During the French Revolution

The last time the cathedral suffered major damage was during the French Revolution. During the anti-Christian fanaticism of the French Revolution, Notre Dame was turned into a “*Temple of Reason*” and dedicated to the atheistic “*cult of reason*”. Later when the “*committee of public safety*” was waging the reign of terror, Robespierre decreed a worship of a supreme being. The Notre Dame cathedral was re-dedicated to the “*Cult of Supreme Being*” with a famous prostitute being enthroned as the “*goddess of reason*” at the high altar. Later the French Revolutionaries converted the cathedral into a storage warehouse. During the French Revolution, 28 statues of Biblical kings located on the West Wall, were beheaded.

Restored by Napoleon

It was Napoleon Bonaparte who restored the cathedral to the Catholic Church in 1801. In 1804, Napoleon was crowned emperor at the cathedral. Pope Pius VII handed Napoleon the crown, which the young conqueror of Europe placed on his own head.

Victor Hugo's Classic Book Led to Notre Dame's Restoration

Notre Dame is named in the title of one of France's literary masterpieces: Victor Hugo's *The Hunchback of Notre Dame*, which is known to the French, simply as: *Notre Dame de Paris*. In 1831, French novelist, Victor Hugo, wrote *Notre Dame de Paris*, published in English as *The Hunchback of Notre Dame*. Hugo stated that he wrote this novel in part to bring attention to the value of Gothic architecture and as a protest to the demolishers who were destroying so much of France's architectural heritage. Hugo's effort to draw attention to the value of the cathedral and medieval architecture in general, led King Louis Philippe to order that it be restored in 1844.

Pipe Organ

The cathedral's pipe organ dates back to the 18th century and is the largest in France. It has 5 keyboards, 109 stops and reportedly 7,374 pipes. In the 1990s the organ was restored at a cost of US\$ 2 Million and took 40,000 hours to complete.

Shocking Destruction

As people saw eight centuries of priceless history, artefacts, oil on canvass paintings and architectural masterpieces go up in flames, many wept openly on the streets. Watching such an embodiment of the permanence of their nation burn and its spire collapse was profoundly shocking to every French person.

Terrorism and Arson?

Many immediately speculated whether this could be an act of terrorism, or deliberate arson. The Paris prosecutor's office said that it had opened an inquiry into the incident. However, president Macron's government made an official statement, while the fire fighters were still battling to control the blaze that they had ruled out any possibility of it being deliberate arson or an act of terrorism! That seemed unprecedentedly premature to announce such an official verdict before any forensic investigation could have even been begun. Normally it takes many days, or even weeks, for fire brigade investigators to conclusively determine the cause of any fire.

Spate of Vandalism and Arson Attacks on French Churches

Suspicions have been raised by a spate of arson attacks and vandalism directed against Christian churches throughout France. Official police records in France identify 875 churches that were attacked, vandalised, or burned, in France, in the last year. In February, Notre Dame de Enfants in Nimes, was looted, vandalised and desecrated. Also in February, the altar at St. Alain Cathedral in Lavaure was set on fire while statues and crosses were smashed throughout the premises. Two people were arrested for that outrage. In another incident on 4 February, a statue of the Virgin Mary was found smashed on the ground at St. Nicholas Church in Houllise,

Yvelines. Just days later the Church of Notre Dame de Dijon was vandalised and desecrated. ***“Their feet are swift to shed blood; destruction and misery are in their ways. And the way of peace they have not known. There is no fear of God before their eyes.”*** Romans 3:15-18

Arson Confirmed on the Second Largest Church in Paris

On 17 March 2019, Paris' second largest church, St. Sulpice, burst into flames with fire damaging the doors and stained glass windows on the building's exterior. The police reported that the fire was caused by arson and arrested two people.

Muslims Celebrate the Burning of Notre Dame

The Al Jazeera report, 16 April, mentioned that Notre Dame was a church where crusaders were blessed before they had left for the Holy Land. Reportedly thousands of Muslims have placed pictures of the burning cathedral with happy/laughing face emoji's on social media. Coming within a week of the sentencing of an Islamic Jihadist attempting to blow up the Notre Dame Cathedral in 2016, the question is: Was the fire in Notre Dame deliberate arson?

Bombing Attempt Thwarted

On 4 September 2016 a car containing six canisters of gas was found parked near Notre Dame in Paris. This led to the arrest of two women and two men, all Muslims, said to be connected with ISIS. One of the women, Sarah Hervouet, 23 years old, was engaged to Adel Kermishe, who was one of the terrorists in the Normandy Church attack who was responsible for killing 85-year old priest, Jacques Hamel, by slitting his throat by the high altar. He also critically wounded an 86-year old man. The Normandy Church attack took place 26 July 2016 at Saint-Etienne-Du-Rouvary, Normandy.

A Symbol of Christian Civilisation

Notre Dame's importance is more than a monumental architectural achievement. Notre Dame has stood for centuries as an icon of French identity. More than that, Notre Dame is seen as a monolithic achievement of Western Christian civilisation, testifying to the central role of Christianity in the development of Europe.

To the Glory of God

The construction of Notre Dame marked the emergence of Gothic architecture. Gothic architecture was designed to make any person entering into a cathedral feel overwhelmed by the greatness and majesty of Almighty God. The grandeur of any cathedral was to testify that it was all about God and not about man. Man should feel infantismal and have his eyes drawn ever upwards to the spire which points to Heaven and to the Cross which testifies to the Sovereign rule of our Lord Jesus Christ, King of kings and Lord of lords.

Christian Civilisation

The cathedrals dominated the skylines of Europe for centuries, pointing to the central role of Christianity in providing the worldview that made Western civilisation and the preeminence of Europe in culture, art, music and the sciences, possible.

Productive Freedom

It was the basic structure of Christian thought that made the superstructure of European civilisation possible. It was Christianity that provided the morality, basic truth claims, understanding of the universe and the very meaning of language, which led to the freest, most productive and prosperous civilisations and economies in the history of the world.

Revolutionary Hatred of Christianity

It is for this reason that the French Revolutionaries targeted Notre Dame as it sought to eradicate the Christian heritage of France and Europe. When the Revolutionaries dethroned God and enthroned a prostitute as the *“goddess of reason”*, it ushered in over two decades of utter chaos, confusion and destructive warfare which engulfed all of Europe.

Recognising Roman Catholic Idolatry

However, the tragic destruction of much of the historic and cultural treasures of Notre Dame should also highlight another tragedy. While the world would see Notre Dame as a national treasure of France and a powerful symbol of Western civilisation and of historic Christianity, Evangelical Christians must note that Notre Dame is a place of Roman Catholic worship. It is specifically named after and dedicated to the Virgin Mary. Above the high altar a massive statue of the corpse of Jesus in the arms of Mary reminds us of the preeminence of Mariolatry, seeing Mary as a co-redemptress.

Superstitious Relics

Much of news media focused attention on saving what the custodians of the cathedral call the “*crown of thorns*”. Their cathedral boasts numerous fake relics such as what is said to be the crown of thorns worn by Christ and a piece of wood that was meant to be part of His Cross and a nail that pierced Christ on the Cross of Calvary. Of course there are numerous crowns of thorns venerated in Catholic churches - all claiming to be the true crown of thorns. There are many pieces of “*the true Cross*”, so-called, venerated in numerous catholic cathedrals and chapels. There are many nails that various catholic churches claim to be one of the three that pierced Christ on the Cross.

Papal Idolatry and Hypocritical Self-Contradictions

For 800 years, Roman Catholic priests have been lifting up a wafer and chalice and worshipping these as the physical body and Blood of Christ. It was at Notre Dame that pope Pius X beautified Joan of Arc, France’s most famous Catholic martyr, after a previous “*infallible*” pope had condemned her as a heretic!

The Gospel of Christ is the True Treasure of the Church

Protestants do not mourn the loss of idols, nor can we condone any acts of terrorism or arson. We mourn the absence of the Christ-centered Biblical Gospel within that great building.

Cathedrals Need Reformation

While we do mourn the loss of a powerful symbol of historic Christianity, we do not agree with the sacramental design of the cathedral and its elevation of the catholic mass. Protestants have never sought to destroy cathedrals, but rather to reform them. Hence, during the Reformation, altars were demolished and replaced with the Lord’s Table. The dividing barrier between clergy and laity was removed. The screen was taken down so that the laity could be participants during the worship service. Protestants brought pews into churches and made the public reading, teaching and preaching from the Word of God as the central part of every worship service. Instead of standing to listen to a liturgy in Latin, Protestants have involved the laity in congregational singing, responsive liturgical worship in their own language and most importantly, the preaching and teaching of God’s Word in the local language.

A Tragedy to be Mourned

We mourn the damage and destruction to this great testament to the centrality of Christianity in Western civilisation. We believe that Protestant Reformers themselves would have mourned the loss of this great cathedral – a symbol of the Christianity they sought to Reform.

A Secular State

However, we also recognise that Notre Dame has been owned by the French state for many years. While the catholic church uses the cathedral for its services, it does not own the cathedral. The French government owns it and pay two-thirds of the funds needed for its upkeep and maintenance. The French see it as a symbol of French identity. Most Frenchmen see Notre Dame as a romanticised ideal of the glory of France, not the glory of God. Rather than a monument to the glory and transcendence of God, most French citizens now see it primarily as a material symbol of French nationalism. Paris is a radical symbol of that secularisation. Today, most in France see Notre Dame as a symbol of their patriotism, not of Theism.

Christian Civilisation Has Been Hijacked and Damaged

Notre Dame should remind us of our great Christian heritage which has been hijacked and undermined, even openly attacked by secularists and Islamists who hate Christianity and are seeking to hijack civilisation. “*...If there is calamity in a city, will not the Lord have done it?*” Amos 3:6

Return to the Bible to Rebuild Civilisation

We need to do more than rebuild the walls, we need to lay solid foundations to rebuild civilisation on the Bible, applying the Lordship of Christ to all areas of life. “*Those from among you shall build the old waste places; you shall raise up the foundations of many generations and you shall be called the Repairer of the Breach, the Restorer of Streets to Dwell In.*” Isaiah 58:12

Appendix 1

NINE STAGES OF GENOCIDE

Dr. Gregory H. Stanton, a professor at Mary Washington University and the Vice President of the International Association of Genocide Scholars says: “*Genocide cannot be committed by an individual or small group; rather, it takes the co-operation of a large number of people and the state. The genocidal process starts with prejudice that continues to grow.*”

Genocide progresses through nine stages, or operational processes, each further stage needing to succeed the previous; although the earlier stages continue to run concurrently throughout the operation.

The Nine stages of genocide are:

1. Classification
2. Symbolization
3. Discrimination
4. Dehumanization
5. Organization
6. Polarization
7. Preparation
8. Extermination
9. Denial.

1. CLASSIFICATION

Every culture distinguishes between variances and classifies them into groups. Subconsciously we distinguish and classify objects all the time. Naturally as infants, we assimilate new information about unknown items and incorporate that new information into existing broad categories containing other items with similar characteristics. All cultures require the classification of the natural and social world. Cultures continuously tend to distinguish between “us” and “them”. People categorise according to nationality, religion, ethnicity, race, language, intelligence etc.

The problem occurs when there is no respect for these differences, for the people, for their private property and for the wellbeing of others within the divergent groups.

Despite the slogan of a *Rainbow Nation*, today South Africa is greatly divided – whatever the category may be defined by - race, poverty and demographics. There was separation in South Africa under the apartheid regime, but was there respect? Was the life, property and wellbeing of the other group respected? Today, discrimination is being sustained by the ANC government for their own political agendas. Is respect for life, property and wellbeing being encouraged today?

2. SYMBOLISATION

Symbols are used to categorise and label certain classifications. Sometimes the symbols originate from physical characteristics, other times the symbols are attributed to the category. Classification and Symbolisation are natural human process and on their own, do not lead to genocide. It is when they lead to discrimination and dehumanization and are coupled with blind hatred, that they become perilous. For example, in Ottoman Turkey, Christians were isolated and marginalized. They wore crosses instead of the muslim attire, so they were easily distinguished and subsequently disparaged. In South Africa now, the colour of your skin alone is used to distinguish the group to be destroyed. Regardless of your wealth or poverty, regardless of your age, regardless of your intelligence, regardless of your nationality, regardless of your life of service and sacrifice for the country, in South Africa the colour of your skin tone can be a matter of life or death.

3. DISCRIMINATION

Discrimination is the unjust or prejudicial treatment of different categories of people, based on race, age, religion etc. This is aggravated when a majority group dominates and uses laws and political power to deny the rights of other groups. For example, the minority group is given limited civil rights or even citizenship, like communists in the Soviet Union prohibited education for Christians. Discrimination on the basis of race was prevalent during Apartheid. Blacks, Coloureds and Indians were only allowed in certain areas and prohibited from other areas. But in their allocated living areas, they were looked after – they were provided with electricity, running water,

education and medical facilities etc. - luxuries that hundreds of thousands of South Africans don't have today. We have all been awaiting the promise of the Rainbow Nation to be delivered, but with no avail. Even though Nelson Mandela promised that *"never, never, never again will any South African be discriminated against on the basis of their race"*, hopes of a Rainbow Nation, along with most of our civil rights, have been trampled into the water barren land, as our country is even more divided and alienated than before.

Entire families are being murdered and mutilated daily, on the basis of their skin colour and language, by people who were "born free". The murderers didn't even live through the times of apartheid, so where is this hatred coming from? It's being taught to them by our very own government. Many black South Africans are upset that they are still living in poverty. Why are they still living like this? Have they themselves not worked hard enough to better themselves, or has the government not fulfilled any of their promises of a brighter future? Rather than actually looking after the people, the leaders in our government are too busy enriching themselves and blaming the poverty and malfunctioning systems on the white minority. *"While they promise them liberty, they themselves are slaves of corruption..."* 2 Peter 2:19

4. DEHUMANIZATION

Dehumanization is depriving a person, or a group of people, of positive human qualities, diminishing them by likening them to animals, diseases, pests, parasites etc. such as, in the Rwandan Holocaust, where the minority group of Tutsis was called cockroaches. As soon as a people group is perceived as 'less human', it becomes easier for the dominant group to exterminate them. Denying others of their humanity pardons their murder and therefore victims are often butchered and mutilated to express this denial. Farmers and their families are having their eyes gouged out, electric drills and angle grinders used on them, "joker" smiles cut into their faces etc.

During this stage of genocide, hate propaganda is spread in media, newspapers and radios, to portray the terrorists as victims and portray the actual victims as villains. White people are still being blamed for oppression, yet according to African Union statistics, the government is stealing a trillion rand (R1,000,000,000,000) a year from the country through corruption and therefore causing millions of South Africans, black and white alike, to live without basic human rights. The Lord knew this would cause disaster and warned against it in His Word, *"Woe to those who call evil good and good evil... who justify the wicked for a bribe and take away justice from the righteous man!"* Isaiah 5:20-23

5. ORGANIZATION

Genocide does not happen by accident, it is premeditated and well organized. Occasionally it is organized by a terrorist group, but most often it is planned by the state. Soldiers are often specially trained and armed, in order to execute the genocidal murders. Even though genocide is planned, the actual killings are often primal, for example hoe-blades to the back of the neck in Cambodia and butchering's by machetes in Rwanda. Force is then often used to gain participants and group hysteria is whipped-up and spread in order to overcome or prevent individual resistance.

We have many racist and Marxist groups in South Africa, like ANC, EFF, BLF who are spreading hate speech and training their followers to detest and want to kill whites.

Genocidal leaders promise utopia and advocate these atrocities in order to achieve the dream. Yet in the end, the only ones to benefit are the handful of leaders.

6. POLARIZATION

After these stages, genocide continues in a downward spiral of blood until it reaches a pool of mass murder. Hate groups continue to reinforce abhorrence by broadcasting lies and propaganda and intimidating their victims into silence. Massacres can then be directed to polarize the groups further, until settlement cannot be negotiated.

Greedy, incompetent and narrow-minded political leaders, are polarizing our country through deceit and incendiary hate speech and have destroyed South Africa's dream of peace and of a Rainbow Nation.

7. PREPARATION

One of the first steps in the preparation of genocide is identification. The victims are singled out and made known. Identification enables the mass killing process to be sped up. In further preparation armies are built, maps are drawn, troops are trained, houses are marked and weapons are bought.

Dr. Gregory H. Stanton of Genocide Watch, states that preparation also includes expropriation of the victims property and often victims are concentrated or herded into a specific area or region. The leaders indoctrinate the nation with a fear or hatred of the victim group.

ANC, EFF, BLF and DA are all political parties who are all vigorously preparing. They are in the process of trying to accomplish “*land reform*” and “*land expropriation*”. They are meticulously planning the removal of white people and they are starting with the farmers. This is a masquerade for theft, for murder and for violence, all under the guise of liberation.

8. EXTERMINATION

As the victims are demonized and not considered human, their deaths are not even considered murder, like in Rwanda, mass murder was called “*work*” and “*clearing the bush*”. Men, women and children are slaughtered and then buried in a mass grave or burned in a heap like rubbish. The savagery of the occurring farm murders is appalling. It is not a matter of property or right, but rather a hatred that has been entrenched deeply within them through many years of endless lies and hate mongering. This is evident, in that, during many of the attacks little or even nothing is stolen. The single aim seems to be to inflict as much excruciating pain as possible.

9. DENIAL

The final stage of genocide is just as tragic as the preceding stages. After every genocide, indubitably, denial occurs - the mass graves are destroyed, witnesses are intimidated or eliminated, historic files are eradicated and any evidence is extirpated. The initiators and leaders deny that any crimes were committed and continue to try and blame the victims for the atrocities. Due to their power, they impede any investigations until they are forcefully driven from power. Because the only information comes from ‘unofficial’ sources, the stories are considered alleged and ostensible. The leaders keep spreading propaganda of distorted statistics and the actual definition of genocide is disputed, as the number of killings is scrutinized as to whether it’s considered genocide or not.

All these lives have been lost and not one lesson is learned. As evil tries to change and rewrite history, it is doomed to occur again and again, in selfish greed.

Our government’s dishonesty continues. Our police force has been ordered to stop collecting data and stop supplying the public with actual statistics. There have been more farm murders than deaths in many wars, such as the Northern Ireland Conflict 1966-1998, the Anglo-Iraqi War 1941 and the Falklands War 1982, just to mention a few. Even so the crisis is dismissed and not considered a crisis or special crime. Farm attackers are found to be using military grade arsenal, unavailable to citizens, yet the government denies that the attacks are premeditated, denies their involvement in the farm murders and denies the public truth and peace.

JURISDICTION

It is clear that there is an explicit communist agenda. We need to learn from history and be vigilant towards the indicative warning signs. None of the ideas and plans of our political leaders are new and revolutionary. They are simply stealing failed ideas from other Marxist rulers, who starved their nations and left their countries in decay. The government idolizes these criminals and their ardour towards them is evident in the fact that we have roads and buildings named after them, for example, Fidel Castro building in Bloemfontein named after the Cuban communist, Che Guevara Road in Durban is named after the mass murdering militant Marxist. They even attempted to name a road in Pretoria after Mao Tse Tung - the butcher of Beijing.

Marxism expresses that ownership of any private property must be confiscated and the state instead, should have ownership of all property. The government is misleading and manipulating poor and uninformed people who are living in rural areas, by lying to them and making empty promises, in order to acquire more votes in the upcoming elections. Yet, every time, without fail, after the election these people will still be living in townships without any of the promises being fulfilled. While the politicians drive even faster cars, live in bigger mansions, buy more holiday houses in the Bahamas, while sipping their 21-year-old whiskey... yet somehow the poverty and oppression is because of the white man and therefore the scapegoat must be slaughtered.

“Do not be afraid of sudden terror, nor of trouble from the wicked when it comes; for the Lord will be your confidence and will keep your foot from being caught.” Proverbs 3:25-26

Emma Vaughan-Jones

Henry Morton Stanley School of Christian Journalism

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725

Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021-689-4480

emma@frontline.org.za

www.hmsschoolofchristianjournalism.org

FEARLESS FARMERS

WHO FOUGHT BACK

At first this story wasn't being told at all. Farmers are being brutally mutilated at a genocidal rate, yet few cared or dared to say a word. There has now been an iceberg tip of much needed coverage on this topic, but there is still an under-the-surface glacier that needs to be uncovered. **Why is the government not trying to get to the bottom of it? What are they trying to hide? Or what are they trying to prove?**

Is this really about **race**? So why are both white and black farmers and workers being attacked? Is it really about **land**? Do the attackers really want to work their fingers to the bone morning, noon and night, through blood, sweat and tears?

Is it about **money**? Then why in 34% of these brutal cases, is not one thing taken? Is it about **poverty**? Then why is the ANC government getting richer while their people are homeless and starving? Is this really to be blamed on the previous government? Then why after 24 years of rule, is there still such destitution?

Why has unemployment grown from under 4 million to 30 million since the ANC came into power? Where is the *Rainbow Nation* we were promised? Where is the security, peace and freedom we were promised?

Is it the poor and underprivileged at fault, or the ANC government? If it's the government's attempt at trying to right past wrong, then why are black people also being attacked? Is this really a war of demographics, or are naïve foot soldiers being brainwashed into a war of hatred and personal greed? We need to honestly answer these questions if we want any curative progress to be set in motion in our splintered country.

We need discernment with regards to media and propaganda. Still more needs to be said, as not everyone has heard or realizes the absolute atrocities and terror that South African Farmers face daily – people being boiled alive, 4 year girls being cut joker style, power tools used on human limbs, women being gang raped, people being cooked alive with blow torches, entire families bludgeoned to death. Farm workers being beaten with iron rods and shot – targeting those who have been there the longest.

If they are also attacking and killing their own people, what is their true aim? Is this really about land, or is this about **selfish greed**? If They are killing fellow blacks, in the hope that they can have the farm for themselves, then no matter who the rightful owner of the land is, no matter if the white people have all left or not, they will continue to murder and plunder for selfish desire, as happened in the **Mfacane** under **Shaka, Dingane** and **Mzilikazi** and more recently in **Zimbabwe**. More truth and press coverage is needed, worldwide and locally, but people need to hear the facts in their entirety. I want to discuss the second side of the story.

What Do the Facts Actually Show?

Last year, 2017, there were 463 Farm attacks, with 94 cases of murder. In 2016 there were 345 attacks resulting in 70 murders. In 2015 there were 318 attacks with 64 murdered. So despite having the element of surprise, only 1 in 5 attacks are successful for the attackers. In the other 4 cases out of the 5, even though the farmers and workers were still horrendously attacked and terribly outnumbered, they were able to fight back and cause the attackers to flee. The farmers are not just sitting ducks. Although it is important to understand and be aware of the absolute atrocities taking place, we also need to look at the success stories. There is hope. If we are aware and are well equipped and prepared for the attacks, we can be triumphant. Evil will not prevail. We need to fight against it. We will not just flee. We are resilient. We are South Africans.

Stories of Resilience

Elderly Couple Fights Back

20 August 2009: Anna-Marie (78) and Koert (80) from Kromdraai were attacked shortly after returning from a shopping trip to Pretoria.

Anna-Marie had opened the kitchen door and Koert was carrying the groceries from the vehicle when they were attacked. They identified the person as someone who drove past their home in the morning on their way out to town.

The attacker hit Anna-Marie over the head, pushed her against the ground and strangled her, while demanding her to keep silent. She shouted, trying to warn her husband, as the attacker first hit her with a wrench and then hit her with a “*knopkierie*”.

Koert was then kicked down on the ground and also attacked with the “knopkierie” as he entered the house - the “knopkierie” was finally broken on his arm.

Meanwhile, Anna-Marie caught the attacker with a sambok before grabbing one of the broken pieces of the knopkierie and hitting the attacker back with it.

The attacker turned around and bit off the tip of Anna-Marie’s ring finger in an attempt to tear her ring off her finger. She kicked him in his genitals, causing him to collapse.

Koert took advantage of the opportunity and threw the attacker out the kitchen door. While Koert was holding the door locked, the attacker broke the window and tore off the burglar bars, trying to get back in again.

“He was crazy. He wanted to get us. You could see he wanted to kill us” says the elderly couple. The attacker was only started to back off when they phoned SAPS and the neighbours for help. The suspect eventually fled empty handed.

No arrest has yet been made. SAPS only opened a case of ‘burglary’, not attempted murder and armed robbery...

Women Resist Attackers

April 3, 2011: Ellen went to take care of her horses at 16:00. She was attacked in the feeding room by two men with balaclavas.

She resisted with her body weight, pulled one attacker’s ballaclava off his head and bit him on the nose.

The other attacker pressed a weapon between her eyes and pulled the trigger. She just heard ‘click’. After the shot did not go off, she was tied up with the horse-riding reins and left in the feeding room.

“I bit the one rope around my wrist slightly loose and then loosened my feet. My biggest fear was about my mother, who was in the house” said Ellen.

Ellen then grabbed a piece of iron from the stable and hid it under her arm. When the two men opened the door, she stabbed the one in the stomach.

She was hit with a brick in the face, smashing her teeth. After falling to the floor she was kicked everywhere, in the back, stomach, face.

She was strangled and they pulled her hair while asking for weapons and money. They then tried to tie her up again, this time with wire.

They rolled Ellen in a blanket and pushed her home in a wheelbarrow. In order to breathe, she had to bite a hole in the blanket.

Meanwhile, Auntie Fenna, Ellen’s mother, was attacked on the veranda and tied to the guestroom’s bed with wire. She pretended to be asleep every time the men passed by her with arms full of their possessions.

Only at 20:55 when it was quiet, could Ellen press the alarm and call for help.

The attackers were caught while they hid in a dam just 500m from the house.

Three Generations Resist

Three women fought to beat three attackers on their farm outside of Brits after one of the women seized the robbers’ axe.

Hannelie Jacobs (59), her daughter Suretha (29) and her 81-year-old mother, Grietjie, bravely stood their ground and managed to keep the attackers at bay.

The three women and four children, including a six-day-old baby, were alone on the farm in Krokodildrift West, when three attackers poured through the windows of the house shortly after 22:00.

“I was in the room with one of the children when the window shattered behind me into shards. I told him to run to his mother. There were three men.” Hannelie told the Kormorant afterwards.

“The robbers opened the door and the security door with an axe and entered the house. They threw the axe at Suretha and my mother. My daughter told me to lock the children in the bathroom. I grabbed the baby and ran. Suretha got hold of the axe and attacked the robbers with it. They were driven out of the house, but came back in again. My mother sprayed them with pepper spray and Suretha still threatened them with the axe.”

Meanwhile, Hannelie pushed the alarm panic button. The women managed to keep the attackers out until

Monitor Net security arrived at the scene. *“Help was there within five minutes, but it felt like hours.”*

The suspects were surprised by the security team and shots were fired. They then fled quickly. According to Hannelie, one of the attackers was dressed in white and two were wearing blue overalls with reflective strips. Members of the Brits community policing Sector 1 arrived at the scene shortly after the attack.

No one was injured during the attack.

“If it were not for Suretha, we were all dead. She had a baby six days ago, but fought for us all. “

This is not the first time this brave woman protected her parents in a farm attack. The family was also attacked a few years ago. *“That night we did not hear the robbers coming in and they confronted my father in his bed. Suretha chased them away with a knife. “*

The Bottom Line

Violence is rampant throughout South Africa. But, the majority of South Africa wants peace between black and white people. Sadly though, with the increasing propaganda and malicious news coverage, that majority could quickly dwindle. The communist, Marxist ANC government is using disinformation in the media, to fill people with hate and convince them to be racist. Together, they are the main instigators of most South African race-related riots. We need to recognise that the real enemies are the irresponsible media and South Africa's corrupt ANC government.

The ANC is busy exploiting their biggest organ, the media, especially SABC, to generate racial division. They use this unwarranted hatred and division to stay in power and to divert the attention of the general public away from the real issues of their incompetence and corruption. Effective and honest administration has not been their legacy, but rather corruption and communism.

Many of our leading politicians and political parties collude, working together to purposefully misrepresent the actual condition of the country. They exaggerate the *“threat”* of white people dominating businesses, of *“white racism”* and of *“majority white land ownership.”*

According to the government's own Land Audit report, white owners can be linked indisputably to only 22% of South Africa's land, most of which is in the Karoo and Kalahari – both of which are semi-deserts.

The Institute of Race Relations did a survey, which documented that close on 80% of all respondents - and 77% of black South Africans - agreed that better education and more jobs would in time ‘make the present differences between the races steadily disappear’. Creating more jobs, improving education and fighting crime were the three top issues which most South Africans wanted the government to focus on. Two-thirds of all respondents and specifically a 62% of black respondents, agreed that politicians are exaggerating the problems posed by racism and colonialism in order to excuse their own shortcomings.

So we can see that actually there is an irresistible and undeniable positivity in race relations. But we need to continue to share the truth and emphasize the importance of discernment when listening to the media. False reports and propaganda are continuously being spread throughout the country by the state-controlled media of South Africa.

What Happened to Truth?

The media uses propaganda as a tactic to keep the population divided between white and black people of South Africa. They use the mass media. They abuse social media, they write blogs and make comments. *“Astroturfing”*, is the laying down of fake grassroots. Marketing has a rich history of this. A troll army can be hired if you have the money. In 2011 the PR firm Bell Pottinger told undercover journalists that they could *“create and maintain third-party blogs”* and spruce up Wikipedia profiles and Google search rankings. There is no doubt that our access to genuine reporting and truth is being stifled.

On the other hand, the media loves hate crimes, as it ‘keeps things interesting’. The problem about a lie, is that most of the statement is truth, with only a percentage being false. Just like rat poison is 98% food and only 2% poison. But it's that 2% that does the damage. It's that 2% that can kill you if you swallow it. They seem to elucidate everything that is wrong with South Africa, which can be the truth part of the lie. But then they falsely lay the blame and responsibility on the innocent; that is the poison part of the lie. So although they report on the disaster and failure evident all around us, they then twist the facts, spreading information that deliberately tries to mislead people away from the inadequacy of the ANC government. Although they may truthfully report on some of the problems and issues, they are very selective, trying to ensure that they do not report on anything that

can lead to exposing their incompetence. Ironically though, they cannot even always get this right. The politicians need a scapegoat to put the blame on. They use someone who can handle it: white people. This disinformation intentionally deceives and causes division. As it is though, there are not enough hate crimes against blacks to go around and therefore lies are necessary and leftist liberal journalists are forced to invent them.

The press itself has been manipulated to be a part of the biggest hate crime hoax. By creating this imaginary reality where blacks are constantly being victimised, they are deliberately inspiring them to attack and murder whites. There is no end to the horrendous killings and there is no state intervention to stop these murders. Yet the media chooses to concentrate much of their efforts into demonizing white farmers.

Even now during the water crisis in Cape Town, farmers are being accused of being the number one 'waster' of water and 'cause' of the lack of water. The victimized farmers are even blamed for being attacked, as they didn't have "good enough security" and "the area was too dark at night" and there were not enough "no trespassing signs" and many other outlandish absurdities. Whatever happened to self-control?! A dark alleyway is not an invitation to mug someone! A woman in skimpy clothing is not an invitation to rape her! Why is it that the victims are the ones in the wrong? Why can no one take responsibility for their own actions? Society has become so grossly backwards and distorted!

These farmers are heroes. Even though they are victimized, viciously attacked, falsely accused, left homeless, jobless and family less and have had war raged against them for the last 24 years; they have faithfully stayed and continue to provide food, to keep the very people alive, who are barbarically raging war against them.

The government declares that they are trying to take peoples farms - without compensation. This is theft in every aspect of the word. A government is supposed promote the general welfare of its country. Theft, encouraging murder, promoting slander... how is this welfare? Yet the world is turning a blind eye.

Donald Trump is portrayed in worldwide media as a white supremacist who is going to destroy America and cause hate and division. But has he actually done any of these things? Has he mobilized a group, encouraging them to kill another group on the basis of race? Has he tried to take away the rights of a specific ethnic group? Has he tried to confiscate private property? If Trump were to do anyone of these things, let alone all of them, the world would be irate! There would be utter chaos. Yet the ANC today and its members throughout the decades, do this and encourage this on a daily basis, yet they not only get away with it, but are applauded for it.

The Consequences

In 1994, South Africa had 70,000 commercial farmers, feeding approximately 100 Million people all over Africa. Then farmers started to get murdered and have their land taken away and many started fleeing the country. This more than halved the number of farmers. About 10 years ago, we were down to 30,000 farmers, but who amazingly were still managing to feed 40 Million people. Now we have less than 26,000 commercial farmers, so they will be producing for even less than 40 Million, yet our population has increased to 58 Million, which means we are now having to import food, as opposed to before when we were able to export most of our food. This is horrifying for the economy and has never happened before in South African history.

Unemployment has gone up by 1 million people for every year the ANC government has been in power since 1994. From less than 5 million in 1994, to almost 30 million now. Almost 50% of South Africa is currently unemployed.

These farm attacks will result in more unemployment. The farmers will try to mechanise as much as possible, as a majority of the attacks involve inside men.

Land expropriation will lead to a drastic increase in unemployment. It will lead to an increase in starvation. And a major decrease in the economy, as happened in Zimbabwe.

Burning of buildings and vehicles, looting of shops, striking from work, none of these things can possibly bring down the price and cost of things. Instead it is increasing the price of everything. Perhaps there are a few benefactors, but in the end someone has to compensate, as nothing in this world is free. VAT has now gone up to 15%, even though the Bible says taxing more than 10% is oppressive. The price of consumer goods will go up. Insurance premiums will go up. Other than the few selfish characters who benefit from such obscenities, the rest of us are left to pay the price!

Action

It is important that we all seek the truth and have discernment when listening to the media, especially political speeches and addresses. It is important to make wise and well-informed decisions. We need to read unconfirmed articles that don't spread mainstream propaganda. We need to listen to accurate reports. We need to inform as many people around us as possible about the truth. We need to have respect and love for one another, regardless of past events, demographics, religion, economic status, gender, etc. Being different is not a weakness, it is a strength. Differences aren't damaging, it is only when people lack respect and love for those who are different, that it is destructive and causes division.

Farm Workers - because many attacks are done by inside men, employees, or people who live in nearby communities, it is mandatory that you and the community are vigilant and truthful. We are given a duty to expose evil. Ephesians 5:11 says, "*Have nothing to do with the fruitless deeds of darkness, but rather expose them.*" You need to take a stand for truth and justice, as this will help to uplift your community. You have power to make a difference by being correctly informed on political situations and voting for a better future. We cannot afford to fall for the short-term empty lies thrown around by corrupt and short-sighted politicians. Rather we must recognise their futility and their endless treachery. If we all stand together against crime, against corruption and against deceit, we can make a difference together.

Farmers – you need to treat your farm workers with respect and dignity. They can be absolute assets to your farms and I have heard many farmers exclaim this. Let them know you respect them and treasure them. You must be faultless with how you treat and communicate with your farm workers, so that no one can turn around and try to blame you for improper conduct. This by no means suggests that we can allow people to walk all over us, but rather if people are not working as they should to confront them with respect and loving concern. This is how God commands us in His Word, to treat one another.

1 Thessalonians 5:12-13 says, "*Now we ask you, brothers and sisters, to acknowledge those who work hard among you...Hold them in the highest regard in love because of their work. Live in peace with each other.*"

We are all made in the image of God and deserve to be treated as such.

A few tips from people who have been attacked:

1. Ensure that all areas around the house are well lit at night time. Make sure there are 'No trespassing' signs up. Have security gates throughout the house, especially by the sleeping quarters, as well as adequate burglar proofing.
2. Be armed and ready to fight at all times. Everyone, including women and children must practice using the weapons and feel comfortable to use them if necessary. Get necessary licenses. Regular target practice and shooting exercises on the farm, will both prepare you in the case of an attack, as well as double up as a deterrent.
3. Regularly test security systems, alarms, telephones etc.
4. As owners of the land, you have a right as to who may or may not enter your property. Explain this to your farm workers. They should respect this and you have every right to grant, or not grant, permission of entry.
5. Maintain good relations with your workers, you are a team.
6. Organise a farm watch system for them; it's their safety and job security at risk too. Encourage them to be alert and on the lookout. Remunerate any useful information.
7. Keep copies of all workers ID documentation, along with photographs and fingerprints.
8. Take care with keys, ensure they are never left lying around, left in a car ignition, etc. to prevent duplicating.
9. Be aware of strange food being left around to poison dogs. Train your dog's not to accept food from anyone but the family.
10. Don't follow a predictable routine. Do things at different times each day and each week - don't always leave the house at the same time, or go to town on a specific day etc.
11. In the case of an attack, remember to stay calm, don't panic. Think clearly and critically, this is your first line of defense and will help you stay in control.
12. Remember soft spots on attackers, ears, nose eyes, genitals – gouging or tearing these takes minimal effort, but is extremely effective. It's never too late or too far along, to fight back furiously, "*be strong and very courageous*".
13. Think about what you would do, or how you would counter attack in such a situation. Be ready.

“Don’t be afraid of them. Remember the Lord, who is great and awesome and fight for your families, your sons and your daughters, your wives and your homes.” Nehemiah 4:14

South Africa is our home. It is all of our homes. Both black and white people have been born here. In our passports, our Identity Books, there is no black or white, we are only green. We are South Africans. Friendships have been made, bonds have been formed. We are brothers all aspiring to a common desire – security, peace, freedom. Let us start taking a stand for truth. Let us take a stand against corruption, crime, racism and rabble rousing irresponsible politicians. For evil to flourish, all good people have to do is nothing. Let us not do nothing in this fight for what is right. Let us actively strive for a better tomorrow... together.

Emma Vaughan-Jones

Henry Morton Stanley School of Christian Journalism

P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725

Cape Town South Africa

Tel: 021-689-4480

mission@frontline.org.za

www.frontlinemissionsa.org

www.hmsschoolofchristianjournalism.org

HOW CAN WE RESIST THE SECOND PHASE OF THE REVOLUTION

“Who will rise up for Me against the evildoers? Who will stand up for Me against the workers of iniquity?”
Psalm 94:16

A Practical Strategy for Survival

1. First of all we need to **be informed**. *“My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge.”* Hosea 4:6. This is first and foremost an information war. It is a battle for the mind. We need to understand our enemy, his overall strategy, his tactics and plan. See our articles: [How Marxists Subvert Churches and Society](#); [Is South Africa Entering the Second Phase of the Revolution](#); [Farms and Freedom Under Fire in South Africa](#); [Fraud, Failure and Farce – Land Expropriation Hearings](#); [Nine Stages of Genocide in South Africa](#); [Fearless Farmers Who Fight Back](#) and other key articles on the www.hmsschoolofchristianjournalism.org website. See also: [The Heart and Soul of Karl Marx](#); [Liberation Theology](#); [How the New World Order is Hijacking Civilisation](#) and [Resisting the New World Order](#) on our www.FrontlineMissionSA.org website.
2. We need to **be interceding**. Prayer is an integral and essential foundation for action. We need to establish prayer groups, prayer chains and prayer networks, mobilising prayer to seek God for Revival and action to work for Reformation and restoration of spiritual life, applying Scriptural principles to all areas of life. Obtain [The Power of Prayer Handbook](#). Pray the Psalms. Visit the www.idop-africa.org website and www.LivingstoneFellowship.co.za website for further teaching on prayer, guidelines and country reports, prayer posters and other resource to help mobilise informed, focused prayer and action against the Revolution. Study and work through the [Hour of Prayer](#). *“... ‘You see the distress that we are in, how Jerusalem lies waste and its gates are burned with fire. Come and let us build the wall of Jerusalem, that we may no longer be a reproach.’”* Nehemiah 2:17
3. We need to **be involved**. Support responsible, balanced, independent sources of news, including independent community radio stations, newsletters and magazines and reliable websites. Disconnect from the lamestream, fake news controlled mass media. Recognise that the BBC (Bolshevik Broadcasting Corporation), CNN (Clinton News Network), Time (Slime) Magazine, Newspeak and Useless News and World Report are not where one can expect fair, balanced and honest reporting. Visit www.hmsschoolofchristianjournalism.org website and the [Henry Morton Stanley School of Christian Journalism](#) Facebook page. Use your social media and networks to mobilise your friends, family and neighbours to mutual support and resistance to the lawless, reckless and dangerous strategies of Marxist Revolutionaries threatening us. Get armed, trained and prepared to defend your family, friends and neighbours. Obtain the [Security and Survival Handbook](#). *“... ‘Do not be afraid of them. Remember the Lord, great and awesome and fight for your brethren, your sons, your daughters, your wives and your houses.’”* Nehemiah 4:14
4. **Implementation**. Expose the communist strategies and AgitProp tactics of the Second Phase of the Revolution. Motivate your friends, family, neighbours and congregation and mobilise them to action. Educate and enlist, inspire positive and practical hope for the future. Counter defeatist propaganda and escapism. Subscribe to the [Christian Action](#) magazine and obtain quantities for distribution in your church and community. Contact your friends and family overseas to mobilise prayer and pressure on elected representatives to pressure and persuade the ANC government of South Africa to cease and desist with their dangerous and irresponsible race politics and plans for land expropriation without compensation.
5. Visit the www.SAVotersGuide.org website. Download the **Voters Guide** and share with family, friends, neighbours and fellow church members. Vote your values. The vast majority of South African voters are supporting parties which are secular humanist and socialist. Most Christians in South Africa are wasting their votes on parties which are anti-Christian, pro-abortion, supporting the GayGB agenda vile perversion under the guise of sex-education in the schools, legalised pornography, legalised blasphemy and other destructive policies. More than half of those eligible to vote do not vote. Hence more than half of all the voters say *“What difference can I make!”* If one could mobilise these inactive, or disillusioned, citizens to get registered to vote and to vote their values, we could dramatically change the political landscape in the country. There are positive movements for independence of the Western Cape and KwaZulu which need to be supported.
6. **Obtain resources for resistance and Reformation**, including: the book [Biblical Principles for Africa](#),

which is also available in [Afrikaans](#) and [French](#). Other useful resources would include: [The Rise of the GayGB and the Pink Inquisition](#); [Pornemic – How the Pornography Plague Affects You and What You Can Do About It](#); [The Ten Commandments – God’s Perfect Law of Liberty](#), also translated into Afrikaans, [Die Tien Gebooië – God se Volmaakte Wet Van Vryheid](#). View the [Agenda 2 – Masters of Deceit](#) documentary and share it with your friends.

7. If you have school-aged children, take a good hard look at the teachers and textbooks which are moulding and filling your child’s mind. **Get involved** in the Parents Teachers Association and School Governing Body of your local school. Seriously and prayerfully consider home education.
8. **Obtain God-honouring, Bible-based and Christ-centered textbooks** to supplement your child’s education. Some recommended History books would include: [Victorious Christians – Who Changed the World](#); [The Greatest Century of Reformation](#); [The Greatest Century of Missions](#) and [Sketches from South African History](#).
9. As **this is first and foremost a Spiritual War**, work to bring the Bible back into every areas of life. Obtain the [Biblical Preaching Handbook](#); [Answering Skeptics](#); [Putting Feet to Your Faith](#); [Reforming Our Families](#) and [Old Testament Survey](#). Be a faithful active member of a Bible based, Christ-centered evangelistic church and Gospel preaching mission dedicated to fulfilling the Great Commission (Colossians 3:9-14).
10. **Be prepared for criticism and opposition**. Obtain [Character Assassins – Dealing With Ecclesiastical Tyrants and Terrorists](#).
11. If you can, plan to **attend** the [Biblical Worldview Summit](#) (4-9 January 2019) near Cape Town. Send your children, or sponsor someone to attend the BWS as we seek to apply the Lordship of Christ to all areas of life.
12. See [What Needs to Be Done?](#) for further practical suggestions and contacts for resisting the Revolution and working for Biblical Reformation.

“Those from among you shall build the old waste places; you shall raise up the foundations of many generations and you shall be called the Repairer of the Breach, the Restorer of Streets to Dwell In.” Isaiah 58:12

Dr. Peter Hammond

Reformation Society
P.O. Box 74 Newlands 7725
Cape Town South Africa
Tel: 021-689-4480
Fax: 086-494-8070

mission@frontline.org.za

www.ReformationSA.org

www.hmsschoolofchristianjournalism.org

Appendix 4

RECOMMENDED WEBSITES

Christian Action: PO Box 23632, Claremont 7735, South Africa,
Email: info@christianaction.org.za, Web: www.christianaction.org.za.

From the Frontline podcast: <http://fromthefrontline.podbean.com/>

Frontline Fellowship News: PO Box 74, Newlands 7725, South Africa
Email: admin@frontline.org.za, Web: www.FrontlineMissionSA.org.

Gospel Defence League: P.O. Box 832, Milnerton, 7435, Cape Town.

Mcalvany G2: <https://mcalvanyintelligenceadvisor.com/special-offers-Daily-G2>.

Mcalvany Intelligence Advisor: P.O. Box 84904, Phoenix, AZ 85071, USA,
Email: <https://mcalvanyintelligenceadvisor.com/contact>, Web: www.mcalvanyintelligenceadvisor.com.

Movieguide: 2510 G, Las Posas Road 502, Camarillo, CA 93010, USA, Web: www.movieguide.org.

World Magazine: P.O. Box 20002, Asheville, NC 28802, USA,
Email: webeditor@wng.org, Web: www.world.wng.org.

World Net Daily: WND, P.O. Box 1627, Medford, OR 97501, USA,
Email: <http://www.wnd.com/contact-wnd/>, Web: www.wnd.com.

Appendix 5

RECOMMENDED HISTORY FILMS

Ben Hur - 1960, starring Charlton Heston. One of the greatest films ever. Powerful depiction of the clash of the humanist state with the Christian Faith in the 1st century AD.

The Fall of the Roman Empire - 1964, starring Stephen Boyd, Alec Guinness, James Mason and Christopher Plummer on the disastrous events which led to the collapse of Rome.

Becket - 1964, starring Richard Burton and Peter O'Toole on the clash between church and state in the 12th century.

The Agony and the Ecstasy - 1965, starring Charlton Heston and Rex Harrison on Michelangelo's conflict with pope Julius II over the painting of the Sistine Chapel in the early 16th Century.

Joan of Arc - 1948, starring Ingrid Bergman, as the inspiring French heroine who changed history, by inspiring her people to resist foreign occupation (Early 15th century).

Martin Luther - 1953, starring Niall MacGinnis. An excellent 1950's Black and White award winning film which has Theological depth and historic accuracy (16th century).

Luther - 2003, starring Joseph Fiennes. A fast moving big budget (US\$100 million) epic on the Great Reformer. An inspiring introduction to the Reformer but shallow and filled with anachronism and takes a lot of liberties with the facts of history.

God's Outlaw - The Story of William Tyndale - 1986, starring Roger Rees. A drama on the English Bible Translator, Reformer and Martyr who gave his life that we could have the Bible in English (16th century). (93 min).

Cromwell - 1970, starring Richard Harris and Alec Guinness, a tremendous epic on the English Civil War and Puritan general Oliver Cromwell, Lord Protector of England. Invaluable insights to 17th century England.

A Tale of Two Cities - 1935, starring Ronald Colman and Donald Woods. Based on Charles Dickens' 1859 classic historic novel. A powerful contrast between English Christianity and French Revolution Humanism.

Amazing Grace - 2006, starring Ioan Gruffudd. A big budget epic on William Wilberforce's parliamentary battles to end the slave trade (End of the 18th century).

Waterloo - 1970, starring Rod Steiger and Christopher Plummer. One of the greatest war films ever made of one of the most important battles ever fought (1815).

Amistad - 1997, starring Anthony Hopkins and Morgan Freeman on the 19th century slave trade.

Florence Nightingale - 1985, starring Claire Bloom and Timothy Dalton. Inspiring introduction to the Lady with the Lamp who launched modern nursing during the Crimean War (1854 - 1856).

God and Generals - 2003, starring Jeff Daniels and Robert Duvall on the American War between the States (1861 - 1863). Honest and historically accurate.

Zulu Dawn - 1978, starring Peter O'Toole and Burt Lancaster provides invaluable insights to the Anglo Zulu War of 1879 and the battle of Isandlwana.

War and Peace - 1956, Leo Tolstoy's literary masterpiece faithfully brought to the big screen depicting Russia during the Napoleonic Wars and the invasion by Napoleon in 1812. Starring Audrey Hepburn, Henry Fonda and Mel Ferrer.

Nicholas and Alexandra - 1971, starring Michael Jayston and Janet Suzman on the Bolshevik Revolution and the last Czar of Russia (1904 - 1918).. Mostly true to history. Some disturbing scenes. Parental guidance advised.

Joyeux Noel - 2005 war drama depicts the Christmas Truce of 1914 during the First World War.

Bitter Harvest - 2017, starring Max Irons in a romantic action drama highlighting the Holodomor famine that killed millions of Ukrainians under Stalin's communist land reform Dekulakisation campaign in the 1930s. Essential viewing to understand communism. Parental Guidance advised.

A Bridge Too Far - 1977, epic war film on Operation Market Garden - the largest airborne operation in history. 35,000 Allied airborne troops parachuted into the Netherlands led to some of the most fierce battles of the

Western Front in 1944. Starring Anthony Hopkins, Sean Connery, Gene Hackman, Hardy Kruger, Maximilian Schell and Laurence Olivier. One of the most authentic war films ever produced.

The Great Raid – 2005 war drama about the military raid in 1945 by US Rangers to free Prisoners of War in the Philippines. One of the very few war films which depicts the reality of what both prisoners and soldiers actually faced in that conflict. Starring Joseph Fiennes and James Franco.

Africa Addio – 1966, an unflinching book at the savage lawlessness that accompanied decolonisation in Africa, including the Mau Mau of Kenya and the Simbas in the Congo. Not for the sensitive viewer, this film documents the massacres and brutality of revolutionaries in Africa.

“How Should We Then Live?” - 1977, by Francis Schaeffer, monumentally important Worldview overview from the time of the Romans through to our present time.

Appendix 6

MOST IMPORTANT BOOKS IN HISTORY

1. The Bible

The Bible is the most translated book in all of history (the whole Bible has been translated into over 540 languages and 2,890 languages have had at least some portion of the Bible). The Bible is the number one best-selling book in all of history (over 3 billion copies). It is the most widely read book in the world. There is no question that it is the most life-changing book ever written. The most influential Bible translation in history is without doubt the 1611 King James Version. The Bible is also the most valuable book in history. A single copy of the Guttenberg Bible (printed in 1456) was sold in 1987, for over US\$4 Million. One copy of William Tyndale's original printed New Testament was sold for over £1 Million. The impact of the Bible upon Western civilisation has been absolutely enormous. The Bible has inspired the greatest literature, the greatest art, the greatest achievements in architecture, the rule of law, the separation of powers, checks and balances, representative government, the sanctity of life, compassion, charity, liberty and justice. The Bible tells the Greatest True story ever told about the Greatest Man, who accomplished the most important task ever - the purchasing of our Salvation with His Blood.

2. The Institutes of the Christian Religion

First published in 1536, by John Calvin, The Institutes is a monumental masterpiece. The final edition of the Institutes, published in 1559, contains more than 1,000 pages in 80 chapters. The Institutes stands out as the finest textbook of Theology, Manifesto for the Protestant Faith, Handbook for Catechism, weapon against heresy and guide to Christian Discipleship. It is a systematic masterpiece which has earned itself a permanent place amongst the greatest Christian books in all of history.

3. The Pilgrim's Progress – From This World to That Which is to Come

Written by John Bunyan and published 1678, Pilgrim's Progress has been translated into more than 200 languages and has never been out of print for nearly 350 years. Written while Bunyan was imprisoned, Pilgrim's Progress is recognised as one of the most influential and successful best-selling books in English, in all of history.

4. An Enquiry Into the Obligation of Christians to Use Means for the Conversion of the Heathen

Written by William Carey, published in 1792. An Enquiry led to the founding of the Particular Calvinist Baptist Missionary Society for the Propagation of the Gospel Amongst the Heathen and launched the Modern Missionary Movement. William Carey is recognised as the Father of Modern Missions.

5. A Tale of Two Cities

Written by Charles Dickens, published in 1859, A Tale of Two Cities contrasts Paris before and during the French Revolution and London affected by the Great Evangelical Awakening. With sales of over 200 Million copies, A Tale of Two Cities is one of the most successful best-selling Novels of all time. The clash between Humanism and Christianity is so clear in this novel, that British Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher, presented a copy of this book to French President Francois Mitterand.

6. Missionary Travels and Researches in South Africa

Written by Dr. David Livingstone, published in 1857, Missionary Travels became one of the most popular travel works ever published in English. With 47 illustrations, engravings, maps and portraits and the Victoria Falls fold-out front piece, Missionary Travels inspired unprecedented interest in Africa and mobilised thousands of Missionaries to Evangelise and disciple previously unreached tribes throughout the continent.

7. How Should We Then Live: The Rise and Decline of Western Thought and Culture

Written by Dr. Francis Schaeffer, published in 1976, How Should We Then Live traces Western history from ancient Rome through the Reformation, the Renaissance and the devastations caused by secular humanism and evolutionism. Schaeffer warns of subtle forms of information control and psychological manipulation of the masses by unscrupulous governments.

8. The Gulag Archipelago

Written by Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn, published in 1973, The Gulag Archipelago exposed the brutal communist concentration camp system, which destroyed over 50 million lives in the Soviet Union.

9. What If Jesus Had Never Been Born?

Written by Dr. James Kennedy and Jerry Newcombe, this landmark book tackles the most unbridled slanders and attacks against Christianity and demonstrates that everything good in this world, from morality to health, from art to economics, from science to civil liberties, would never had occurred, had Jesus Christ never lived.

10. Understanding the Times

Written by Dr. David Noebel, first published in 1994, *Understanding the Times* provides a comprehensive guide to the most popular worldviews of our day: Secular Humanism, Marxism/Leninism and the New Age movement. These worldviews are then compared to Biblical Christianity. Dr. James Kennedy described studying *Understanding the Times* as more valuable than a university education.

Appendix 7

RECOMMENDED BOOKS ON JOURNALISM

- *Henry Morton Stanley School of Christian Journalism Manual* by Peter Hammond
- *Telling the Truth: How to Revitalise Christian Journalism* by Marvin Olasky
- *The Case for Christ: A Journalist's Personal Investigation of the Evidence for Christ* by Lee Strobel
- *The Struggle for the Soul of Journalism: The Pulpit vs. the Press, 1833 – 1923 (Journalism in Perspective)* by Ronald Rogers
- *The Case for a Creator: A Journalist Investigates Scientific Evidence that Points Towards God* by Lee Strobel
- *This Book Changed Everything: The Bible's Amazing Impact on our World* by Vishal Mangalwadi
- *The Case for Miracles: A Journalist Investigates Evidence for the Supernatural* by Lee Strobel
- *Media, Journalism and Communication - Reclaiming the Christian Intellectual Tradition* by Read Schuchardt

Appendix 8

RECOMMENDED FILMS ON JOURNALISM

- *The Case for Christ* - 2017 Dramatic film on an Atheist journalist who seeks to disprove his wives Christian Faith).
- *Teachers Pet* – 1958 dramatizing the conflict between a journalist editor and a journalism instructor.
- *Citizen Kane* - 1941 Austin Wells classic.
- *Absence of Malice* - 1981 Paul Newman film which examines journalistic ethics, balancing the public right to know with damaging personal information being disclosed.
- *Network* - 1976 classic.
- *Expelled – No Intelligence Allowed* - a 2008 Ben Stein investigation into the conspiracy in academia to exclude people who believe in intelligent design.
- *What If Jesus Had Never Been Born?* - Dr. James Kennedy's classis documentary expose.
- *Africa Addio* - 1966 unflinching look at the savage lawlessness that accompanied decolonialisation in Africa, including the Mau Mau of Kenya and the Simba in the Congo. Not for the sensitive viewer. This film documents the massacres and brutality of revolutionaries in Africa.
- *Agenda 2* - An outstanding example of investigative journalism to discover the agenda behind so much of the destructive policies that ruined the 20th century.